



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 10

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Typical Li Wuliang!

When everybody else was out, Shangguan Zhuifeng became serious all of a sudden. He said, "Brother Ye, you..."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "It isn't a good time to have this conversation yet. Let's talk when the time comes. You are unable to help after all. You know what I mean."

Shangguan Zhuifeng looked deplorable as he said, "Okay!"

Then he said, "However, I have to seek justice for Brother Li Wuliang! No matter with or without my legs!"

Ye Xiao smiled. "Your legs are going to be fine. By the way, why do you trust me so much?"

That was true. They had only spoken a few words to each other.

Shangguan Zhuifeng smiled. "Sometimes, people are still strange to each other after a lifetime. Sometimes people become close friends in seconds. A few words are enough! What you said when you whispered, I thought only Brother Li and I knew that. I guess Xiao Monarch might know it. However, I never expected Brother Ye, you would know it too. Since you know those words, you must know what it means to me. I am sure you are either a friend of Brother Li or a friend of Xiao Monarch.

"Brother Li was the man I can trust with my life. Xiao Monarch is his most trustworthy friend. I have never met Xiao Monarch, but I am sure I can trust him too.

"They both didn't like to talk. I guess they would never tell those words to others recklessly. Whoever know those words must be a trustworthy friend of either of them.

"Brother Ye, you have the trust of them, so I am sure I can trust you too.

"Besides, you are a Ye!"

Shangguan Zhuifeng spoke gently, "Let alone Tie-Er's life, even the entire Black Cavalry Alliance, I am surely willing to hand it to you! I won't hesitate!"

Ye Xiao in took a deep breath and didn't know what to say.

What Shangguan Zhuifeng said reminded him of Li Wuliang.

[Li Wuliang, my brother. You died a long time ago, yet this man here still trust you so much!]

[He even trusted me because of you. He actually put his son's life in my hand!]

[Fierce Blade... You truly are a powerful blade even in heaven...]

"One sword cross the sky; thousands of horses surpass the wind. Laughter of the Monarch; hero of eternity." Shangguan Zhuifeng murmured, "You know these words. I guess you also know where they came?"

Ye Xiao looked at him and said, "As far as I know, you said it. If you would like to hear the story, I can tell more."

Shangguan Zhuifeng blushed. He seemed embarrassed.

What Ye Xiao said seemed normal, however, it somehow made the chief of Black Cavalry Alliance feel embarrassed.

What Ye Xiao actually meant, [You said you trust me, but you decided to test me. I don't mind though. If you don't mind, I can be cooperative.]

However, he understood why the old man would do this.

He was an old cultivator in the martial world. He should be skeptical.

"I am young. I never had the chance to see the black cavalries travel across the realm. Because somebody wanted to become the eighth great sect in the world, he said those words... What an ambitious man..."

Ye Xiao smiled and looked at Shangguan Zhuifeng. "Do you want to hear more? Brother Shangguan..."

Shangguan Zhuifeng blushed and said, "Brother Ye, you are teasing me. Well... I guess we are good friends now..."

Ye Xiao laughed.

Shangguan Zhuifeng blushed. He felt embarrassed. He was thinking about the past and said after a while, "It was too much a dream when I had that idea... Brother Li scolded the sh*t out of me... Ignorant, empty-headed, madcap... He was so mad at me... He was such a quiet person, yet when he wanted to talk... That was..."

Ye Xiao laughed. He didn't say anything. He knew Shangguan Zhuifeng was still testing him. He said Li Wuliang could talk much because he wanted to know how familiar Ye Xiao was to Li Wuliang. He wanted to know whether this young man was closer to Li Wuliang or to Xiao Monarch.

Friend of Li Wuliang or friend of Xiao Monarch, Shangguan Zhuifeng would trust him, however, in a different extent. Li Wuliang's friend was one hundred percent his own man. However, Xiao Monarch's friend was somehow a little more distant.

Ye Xiao understood it. He knew how deep an old man like Shangguan Zhuifeng could be. He wasn't annoyed. He was Li Wuliang's best friend after all. He and Shangguan Zhuifeng should be like brothers too. He wouldn't mind being tested.

The story was real.

What happened was more complicated than what Shangguan Zhuifeng just said.

In the old days, Black Cavalry Alliance was a great organization. It was overwhelming in the world, so close to surpassing some top powerful sects. Shangguan Zhuifeng did want to develop Black Cavalry Alliance into the eighth great sect.

However, Black Calvary Alliance was too weak in cultivation compared to the great sects. Most importantly, they didn't have some real influential cultivators. They seemed powerful, but everybody knew it took only one real superior cultivator to ruin their valley. Even if Black Calvary Alliance could solve the problem, they would have been utterly weakened. That was a fatal shortage for a great sect. Because of that, Shangguan Zhuifeng went to Li Wuliang and asked him to join the alliance.

He even wanted Xiao Monarch to join them too. He actually wanted Fierce Blade and Xiao Monarch to replace himself, to be the chiefs of Black Calvary Alliance, and let them decide which of them to be the Top Chief.

What Shangguan Zhuifeng wanted was the agreement of Li Wuliang and Ye Xiao. As long as the two of them said yes, Black Calvary Alliance would become the eighth great sect!

Fierce Blade and Xiao Monarch were both top range super cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm. They were powerful enough to make it happen.

Shangguan Zhuifeng had traveled a long way to talk to Li Wuliang. He thought, as long as Li Wuliang agreed, Ye Xiao would very likely say yes. If Li Wuliang talked to Xiao Monarch, Xiao Monarch would definitely promise to help. Even if he didn't really join the alliance, it was also good to have his name written in the book of the alliance. Shangguan Zhuifeng was so confident.

Xiao Monarch as a guest member, Li Wuliang as the chief of Black Calvary Alliance, the eighth great sect it was!

Shangguan Zhuifeng had thought of the slogan of the eighth great sect. 'One sword cross the sky; thousands of horses surpass the wind. Laughter of the Monarch; hero of eternity.'

Ye Xiao wasn't mentioned in the first line, but there were two lines for Ye Xiao, the last two lines. In fact, Li Wuliang and Ye Xiao were both heroes of eternity in Shangguan Zhuifeng's mind.

However, when Shangguan Zhuifeng got to Li Wuliang and told him the plan, Li Wuliang kicked him off the mountain and scolded him.

The plan was killed. It never happened.

"Chief Shangguan, do you remember what else did he say about you other than ignorant?" Ye Xiao started to laugh.

Shangguan Zhuifeng looked at Ye Xiao for a long time, like looking at a great mountain from a low position.

...

Chapter 902: That Accounts For It!

Ye Xiao was enlightened. He was trying to retell every detail of the past, so he forgot to be respectful when he called Li Wuliang. It was too casual, and he actually called his name directly.

He even said 'typical Li Wuliang'.

That was so normal in his previous life.

Ye Xiao suddenly felt sad.

He used to point at Li Wuliang's nose and shout at him before they started to have a big brothers' fight.

Li Wuliang did shout at Ye Xiao too. In fact, Li Wuliang was much better at scolding and shouting. Shangguan Zhuifeng had experienced it. Fierce Blade was actually a chatterbox in front of his close friends...

It never hurt to have a quarrel between brothers!

Sometimes, Ye Xiao dreamt about the old days when he and Li Wuliang were shouting at each other. It was gone. It wouldn't happen again!

Now, he just called Li Wuliang's name, yet it became something special for others...

Shangguan Zhuifeng was looking at him with respect.

He was respectful to his departed brother's best friend!

He still didn't know Ye Xiao's true identity. In his eyes, Ye Xiao was now merely a weak little sheep...

However, he could feel how casual the young man was when he called Li Wuliang's name.

He could feel the confidence in Ye Xiao's heart!

He was sure about it.

"Cough... Hmm... Brother Li only called me ignorant and

stupid... That's all..." Shangguan Zhuifeng was embarrassed.

"Well, I remember he called you a pig head too!" Ye Xiao said, "The seven great sects all have thousands of years of history. Your robbery organization has been running for less than two hundred years. How could you even think of being side by side with those great sects? How many disciples do you have? How many disciple brothers do you have? How much confidence do you have? How many..."

Ye Xiao's voice suddenly became heavy and deep as like mountains falling down. "A bunch of team leaders, captains, chiefs... Are you sure you can be as good as their disciples? Masters? Elders? Grandmasters? Huh? You were even worse than ignorant... You wanted me to join you too? You want Ye Xiao to be a guest member? Your brain... Is it all soy milk in your head?"

Shangguan Zhuifeng turned stiff when he heard the first word of Ye Xiao.

The voice... It was the most familiar voice in his heart.

It sounded just like Li Wuliang! Deep, heavy, strong, powerful, overwhelming! Shangguan Zhuifeng would believe Li Wuliang was still alive if he closed his eyes and listened to the voice.

He felt like Li Wuliang was scolding him again, with his finger pointing at his nose.

[Why didn't I close my eyes. If I did, I can hear Brother Li shouting at me again... Even though I know it is false... It would still be good to experience it... I... I missed it!]

Shangguan Zhuifeng felt poignant and nearly shed tears.

What Ye Xiao said was exactly the same words Li Wuliang said to Shangguan Zhuifeng. He sounded exactly like him. The voice, the way he spoke, all were the same.

Shangguan Zhuifeng wondered how this young man knew so much about their past. However, no matter what, he now totally

believed that this Ye Jun had a close relationship to Li Wuliang or Xiao Monarch.

"About that... I was hotheaded. I was a frog in the well, who didn't know how big the sky was..." Shangguan Zhufeng sighed. "As I think of it now, I felt lucky I didn't do it. Those main forces in the realm might not be able to destroy us openly, but they had countless filthy ways to ruin us... Me and Black Calvary Alliance would become a big joke..."

He sighed, "It is a shame... Brother Li and Brother Ye..."

Ye Xiao twisted his lips.

[Well... It's fine you call him Brother Li... Since when did you call me Brother Ye? I don't remember we have met before...]

"Brother Ye, I have no doubts now." Shangguan Zhufeng grabbed the hands of the wheelchair. His eyes looked sharp. "Let me clean out the rats in Black Calvary Alliance this time!"

Before Ye Xiao said anything, Shangguan Zhufeng shouted, "Somebody come!"

The elders that had just left returned to the room immediately.

"Bring the second wife of my son to me. Go get Long Yingtai too!" Shangguan Zhufeng decisively said with a dark face.

"Yes!"

Ye Xiao frowned. He didn't want to say anything now. He decided to just wait and see.

The man who stood beside him was the prime executor of Black Calvary Alliance, Yin Wuqing.

He looked quite creepy on the face. His eyes were had a horrifying glow, like the eyes of the vultures in the desert. No matter who he was looking at, his eyes were full of questions.

It made people feel naked when standing before him, as if no secrets could be kept safe in his eyes...

[That is impressive. Shangguan Zhuifeng actually has such a man to be the prime executor... Look at his judgmental face... That's a bit infective...] Ye Xiao thought.

In front of Shangguan Tie's bed, Shangguan Zhuifeng and Yin Wuqing started the inquest. After a short time, the truth was revealed.

The man and the woman knew they were unable to cover the truth anymore when they saw the Chief and the prime executor.

They knew that they would be tortured if they didn't confess themselves with honesty. That was why they decided to just be frank.

Shangguan Zhuifeng was so sure about this because Ye Xiao enlightened him. Since Shangguan Tie married this second wife, she cooked for him every day, because she was good at cooking.

Long Yingtai was the person who introduced this woman to Shangguan Tie.

Long Yingtai was Shangguan Zhuifeng's foster son, but the only foster son.

Shangguan Zhuifeng had one son and three daughters. The three daughters were married. Except these four people, Long Yingtai, the foster son, was the person who was closest to Shangguan Zhuifeng.

If Shangguan Tie died, Shangguan Zhuifeng would lose interest on Black Calvary Alliance. This organization would most likely fall into Long Yingtai's hand.

In fact, during the time when Shangguan Tie was lying in the bed, many people had suggested to let Long Yingtai take the responsibility of the alliance. A few elders kept rejecting it, so it didn't happen.

Ye Xiao was a bit shocked by the truth.

...

Chapter 903: Human Vice!

In fact, Ye Xiao didn't have a positive expectation on Black Calvary Alliance. It was a powerful force which had fame and wealth in the martial world. It was nearly one of the most powerful forces in Qing-Yun Realm. All they needed was a few great cultivators.

However, two chiefs of it, one had a stroke while the other was dying. That was a miserable situation. There must be somebody to blame. Whoever did this to Black Calvary Alliance must be powerful!

Ye Xiao didn't expect to dig out the people who planned the conspiracy. It might be one of the great sects who didn't want Black Calvary Alliance to grow bigger and stronger, so they wanted to end it. Maybe it was that secret organization who was manipulating everything!

He wasn't being skeptical. This was his second life now. He had seen too many schemes. Zuo Wuji, Master Bai, Wan and Xiu, Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect, the kingdoms, these were all people who live with schemes and conspiracy. After he returned to Qing-Yun Realm, after the long journey to the Cold Moon Palace, he encountered the most vicious assassination. He nearly died! Now that he luckily survived it, he had to be much more cautious!

Unexpectedly, Ye Xiao realized the conspiracy against Shangguan Tie was a bit obvious!

He told the others that Shangguan Tie was poisoned, so it led to the truth that there was a rat inside Black Calvary Alliance. However, he didn't expect the truth would be revealed so quickly and drastically.

In fact, it was quite reasonable that the truth would be revealed so quickly. Ye Xiao had pointed out the most important point. Shangguan Zhuifeng knew his son well. The soup with poison was

the keyword that came into Shangguan Zhuifeng's ear. Shangguan Tie had a peculiarity... He loved soup. He especially loved one soup.

Flying Dragon bone soup.

Flying Dragon was a large-sized spiritual beast that only existed in Qing-Yun Realm. The soup that was made with its bone had an extremely good smell. However, it was also fishy. The two kinds of tastes mixed together, making it difficult to eat. But if the fishy flavor could be removed, it would be the most delicious soup.

That second wife of Shangguan Tie happened to be good at making this soup. That was why everyday, Shangguan Tie would have one bowl of this soup that was made by his second wife.

It was obvious that she was the most suspicious person who could conveniently put the poison into the soup.

It was Long Yingtai who introduced this woman to Shangguan Tie... so...

It went so well to catch the assailant and the man behind her.

Things seemed to be so simple. It was not as terrible as Ye Xiao thought!

As the truth was revealed, it was simple. However, if Ye Xiao didn't come to this place and didn't notice the poison, nobody would find out the evilness of these two people even after Shangguan Tie died.

Shangguan Zhuifeng looked a few years older in just seconds.

Especially when he sentenced the murderers with death penalty and when Long Yingtai talked to him.

"How can you blame me?

"Am I truly wrong?

"As a man, how can I live without a purpose? How can I live without ambition? My ambition is built on a certain foundation!

Of course, it needs a foundation! It needs something to let my ambition grow!"

Long Yingtai shouted, "I am just a normal man, the son of a black cavalry warrior. My father died in a fight, so you gave me food. That's good. I appreciate it! Gratitude!

"I have been prepared to sacrifice for Black Calvary Alliance. Why did you recruit me as your personal disciple? Your only disciple?

"Didn't you give me a chance to grow my ambition when you told everybody I was your only disciple? Don't I want to be a man of power? Of course I do! I dream for myself! I was thinking about how to help the young chief to make Black Calvary Alliance stronger!

"I wanted to be the second most powerful man in this place! I can do it! I know I can!"

"Then you... you fostered me!" Long Yingtai looked fiendish. "Don't you know that? I became your son! I have the right to inherit everything you have! As long as your son is gone, I am the only one in the world who can be the new chief of Black Calvary Alliance!

"You know what, I have been struggling on this for three fucking years! Devil and angel, they have been fighting inside my head, torturing my heart!

"I struggled! Many times! The angel always won, until devil defeated the angel. I have been wondering whether I should do such a vicious thing just to build my own future? Or maybe I should just be a subsidiary all my life..."

"This is all because of the opportunity you gave me." He looked unreconciled. "An influential force, over a hundred thousand cavalries... Countless wealth... The power... Commanding a great force with a wave of the coachwhip! I... I want it... I want it too!

"I was in the bottom of this place. You raised me up step by step. I

know I owe you a lot. I know I shouldn't be so vicious. But... I was in such a high position... The power... is so close to me... I can't control my ambition anymore. Everything just started naturally...

"I introduced Ying Hongxian to Brother Tie. She was mine and she still is. I wanted to get this done without being noticed..."

Long Yingtai shouted, "Father... I don't want to live anymore. I know I don't have the chance to live. Before I go, I want to say something to you. Next time... when you think of making such a decision... to treat somebody with your pure heart... you must make sure that person is worth your concern! Human beings are evil. I am just one of so many. We are all the same!"

"Farewell... father!"

Long Yingtai was caught by the executors. Shangguan Zhuifeng looked at them leaving. He was shaking.

His face was twisting. His lips were trembling. He tightly closed his eyes.

The room was in silence.

Shangguan Tie was still lying on the bed like a dead body.

Shangguan Zhuifeng didn't spare his foster son. He did hesitate, but he didn't say anything to stop it. He looked so old at this moment. He was in great grief.

His foster son tried to murder his natural son for the power...

Shangguan Zhuifeng was heart-broken.

[How can a human be so vicious?]

[Shouldn't he have gratitude? Can't a little help bring much in return? You don't have to return the favor, but you don't have to hurt us, do you?]

[What is wrong with this world?]

Shangguan Zhuifeng kept asking this question in the heart.

After a while.

An executor walked in. "Report, Chief. Long Yingtai and Ying Hongxian have been beheaded. Should we bring you the heads?"

Apparently, somebody purposedly sent him to ask about it.

Usually, they should just bring the heads and show it to the Chief, as evidence for their work.

"No need..." Shangguan Zhuifeng closed his eyes and shook his head in grief.

...

Chapter 904: Why?

"Don't grieve, Chief. Power always blinds people. Long Yingtai was lunatic and unscrupulous. He deserved this!" Yin Wuqing coldly said, "What he said before he died, he was just trying to be spared. The old saying is right though. Men speak kindly in the presence of death. If he was spared from death, he would still be a vicious prick. In fact, he would be even worse!"

"He would continue as a vicious man!"

Ye Xiao nodded. He agreed with Yin Wuqing on this point.

Shangguan Zhuifeng sighed. He eventually shed warm tears. He turned around, looked at Ye Xiao, and spoke in a hoarse voice, "Brother Ye, you are the person who helped us catch the rat. Now we are counting on you about my son too..."

"I will do my best. Please don't worry. The young chief will be safe. God will help." Ye Xiao nodded and promised.

Maybe he was simply comforting Shangguan Zhuifeng, or he just wanted to praise himself. 'God will help'! If Shangguan Tie was cured, somebody must have helped. Who was the god then?

"Alright. I am tired, both physically and mentally. I should better go get some sleep now." Shangguan Zhuifeng seemed so down. His face looked grey. He nodded and then asked somebody to push him out.

What could be seen in his shadow were grief and desolation.

Every day was torture for patients. Time mattered. For those who were getting better, it was the sign of both hope and pain. When the patients felt the illness disappearing, they would become more and more delighted!

Ye Xiao had been staying in Black Cavalry Alliance for ten days. It was a long time for Ye Xiao!

However, the ten days were full of brightness and hope for Black Cavalry Alliance!

Shangguan Tie was almost cured within the ten days. He was getting better and better. He was clearly conscious now, and even his cultivation was back. Soon, he would be completely cured. Maybe he would become a better and stronger person after the suffering.

About Shangguan Zhuifeng's disease, Ye Xiao wasn't quite good at leechcraft, so he didn't work much on the stroke. However, Erhuo and the Boundless Space were his secret cheat programs. He basically could handle any disease. Shangguan Zhuifeng was back to health.

Two good news spread in the valley of Black Cavalry Alliance. Everybody was enjoying it. The valley was full of joy and happiness.

Suddenly, the grief and sorrow that had haunted everybody were gone.

Those who were clever enough had noticed that Shangguan Zhuifeng was more and more respectful to the young man nobody knew before. They even realized the Chief wasn't just respecting him for what he did for his son.

Their Chief respected the young man with his full heart.

In fact, he was even a bit afraid.

The clever ones all felt weird about it.

Shangguan Zhuifeng was level eight of Dao Origin Stage. In Qing-Yun Realm, he should be a powerful figure, let alone the huge force he was commanding. He used to be unruly. They wondered why he suddenly acted so politely to others?

To a young man who was obviously only Dream Origin Stage?

Why?

The young man saved both the Chief and his son. That was a great favor. It might be overreacting to respect him this way, but it at least had an explanation. However, this was not the reason why he respected the young man so much!

People in Black Cavalry Alliance were all confused!

Even Shangguan Tie couldn't understand. When he woke up and realized his father's attitude to the young man, he asked his father, "Why?"

It was reasonable to be grateful and polite to the man who saves their lives. However, it wasn't just that! This was questionable!

Shangguan Zhuifeng blandly answered his son, "This is about something I have been regretting all my life! Black Cavalry Alliance had some tough days in the past! But we are waiting for one day! Don't try to dig on this anymore. It isn't a good time to tell you yet. You will get to know everything when the time is right."

Shangguan Tie gave up.

However, he kept it in mind.

Regret!

[What is father regretting?]

He suddenly felt chilled in the heart.

...

It was the day Ye Xiao left the valley.

"Everything is done. Everything is fine. I guess I should get going. I will go to Sky Soul Mountain. I was heading there earlier," Ye Xiao said.

"I will go with you." Shangguan Zhuifeng heard the words Sky Soul Mountain, so he suggested to go with Ye Xiao.

It triggered the softest part in his heart!

"I am just going to Sky Soul Mountain for a tour. What are you

going to do, Shangguan? If I let you come with me, it will draw too much attention. There are lots of things that might happen if you come and I don't want any of them to happen at all. You are not asking to help. You are asking to make trouble."

Ye Xiao was surprised. He thought, [How quickly he accepted the situation. He actually wants to do something right after making sure I am on the same side...]

"Uh... I have just waited for too long. I can't wait..." Shangguan Zhuifeng looked excited and thrilled, "Now that I can run and I can ride, I can't wait to have a good fight... even if my legs will be chopped off..."

Ye Xiao was speechless. He looked at the fool who just talked nonsense without saying a word.

"Urh... I didn't mean it... I mean... The revenge... About Brother Li..." Shangguan Zhuifeng tried to explain.

Ye Xiao held his forehead and kept quiet. He nearly shed tears because of the stupidity of Shangguan.

[Oh my bloody heavens. It may be lucky that he had a stroke... Otherwise, he would definitely lead his one hundred thousand black cavalries to kill across the martial world... It would never have the chance to come to this place...]

The revenge of Black Cavalry Alliance would surely make big troubles for the three factions. However, it would also bond the three factions tighter. They would eventually defeat and destroy Black Cavalry Alliance. In other words, Shangguan was not seeking justice, but seeking death!

In fact, this great Chief of Black Cavalry Alliance seemed to be quite excited about it.

"The Grey Wolf came to see me one day. He was so worried when he saw me... Don't get me wrong, he wasn't worried because I was disabled and my son was dying... He was worried and nervous

because I couldn't move... He kept scolding me... If I wasn't sitting in a wheelchair, I guess we would probably start a big fight..."

Shangguan Zhuifeng made a long sigh. "Here is what he said... Can't you pick another day to get yourself fxcked up? Why do you have to get damaged now? You can't even move? What a wretched egg..."

Then he added, "Oh... It was him calling me a wretched egg... I am not calling him that..."

...

Chapter 905: Grey Wolf Fought For You!

Erhuo had been staying in Boundless Space listening. [What? Wretched egg is a high compliment, okay? I was once an egg too! Wretched egg! Definitely a beautiful compliment! You ignorant fool!]

Ye Xiao was speechless about what happened to Shangguan Zhufeng. However, he also felt warm in the heart.

[There are brothers who moan for Brother Li, and there are also brothers who moan for me!]

The Grey Wolf was the Chief of Grey Wolves Group, Cang Gulang [1].

He was raised by wolves and didn't have parents. He was like a wild animal.

When he was young, he met his master, an unusual person, who led him back to the human world. He didn't forget the fact that he grew up among the wolves, so he gave himself the name, Cang Gulang.

When he first stepped in the martial world, he was just like a wild wolf. He fought wherever he went. With the strength and the boldness, soon he gathered a bunch of people, and built a young force in the realm. Because he was too unruly, he pissed a big sect.

His group was still too weak compared to the enemy. No matter how brave they were, they couldn't defeat the sect. No matter what they tried, they just failed. One day, he was surrounded by the enemies, about to be killed.

At that time, Ye Xiao went by.

Ye Xiao had always been traveling alone. He didn't intentionally get involved to this. He glanced at Cang Gulang, and somehow, he liked the wolf. So he saved him.

Cang Gulang admired Ye Xiao for his great power and also appreciated him for his help. That was how he became a hardcore supporter of Xiao Monarch.

As the Grey Wolves Group grew stronger and bigger, Cang Gulang was also getting more and more powerful. Day after day, this group became a big force in Qing-Yun Realm.

Grey Wolves Group was not as powerful as Black Cavalry Alliance in Qing-Yun Realm, but it was definitely much more influential than most of the other organizations!

After Xiao Monarch died, Cang Gulang burst in tears and swore to heavens that he would take revenge!

Because of that, Grey Wolves Group was attacked by the three factions.

After a few rough fights, the group disappeared. Nobody knew where to find them. They were actually hiding, waiting for an opportunity.

In the end, Grey Wolves Group contacted Black Cavalry Alliance.

If Shangguan Zhuifeng didn't have the stroke and Shangguan Tie wasn't lying on the edge to death, maybe the two forces had been bonded together for a long time and fought back against the three factions for a long time!

Ye Xiao was lost in such thoughts for a while.

He didn't know that after he died, there were still brothers working so hard trying to avenge him. No matter how the three factions suppressed and attacked them, they didn't give up.

"Not only Gu Canglang, but also Han Bingxue, the Desolate Sword, was also insisting. When he knew Brother Ye died, he actually passed out. Awhile later, he broke a sword to make a vow. He actually swore to kill every single one in the three factions! The desolate traveler disappeared in the grey mountains, Han Bingxue, disappeared in the world.

"After that, there was a secret assassin who kept killing people in the territory of the three factions. He seemed only killing for no reason. He was so mysterious and nobody ever saw his face. Recently, this assassin has been wandering in Saint Sunlight Sect's place. Over a hundred men of Saint Sunlight Sect were killed with one strike by this secret assassin!"

"I reckoned that this assassin is very likely Han Bingxue."

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a long time when he heard that name, and then he made a long sigh.

There was an emotion in this sigh.

Shangguan Zhuifeng heard the sigh and felt touched in the heart. He slightly looked up and glanced at Ye Xiao's face.

Ye Xiao was calm and peaceful but looked full of yearning. In fact, he had a sense of indifference that only could be seen on the face of a king.

Shangguan Zhuifeng sensitively felt that this young man had a special vigor, saying 'I am the peerless lord of the world and I laugh at all heroes in history'. Shangguan Zhuifeng was shocked.

He took a deep breath and calmed down before he went on talking cautiously.

"Besides..."

"Other than that..."

Shangguan Zhuifeng kept talking and talking. After talking a lot, he sighed and said, "The three factions thought Fierce Blade and Xiao Monarch were absolutely isolated cultivators, that they had no friends or allies. In fact, these two big brothers traveled the world and helped lots of people. They both were kind and generous. Of course, they had some loyal brothers! Each brother of them is elite! Every one of them is a tough man!"

"However, they are mostly all the same with the two departed

brothers. They all like to walk alone. They are all unruly... If they stay together, they are just a bunch of rabbles. They wouldn't respect each other... They wouldn't let anybody command them...

"If one of the two honorable brothers is still alive, either of them could keep them under controlled. Everyone would behave well... Either of them could lead the brothers to tear the three factions apart from bottom to top..."

Then he made a deep sigh.

"No matter what, if they are going to declare war to the three factions, Black Cavalry Alliance will be the vanguards!" Shangguan Zhuifeng added powerfully.

It was like a sincere vow he made from the bottom of his heart.

"No indiscretion," Ye Xiao said.

Shangguan Zhuifeng was the great chief of Black Cavalry Alliance, also an experienced man, but because of the finitude of his knowledge and view, he couldn't have a correct estimation of the real power of the great sects.

In fact, if Ye Xiao didn't go to Cold Moon Palace and learned the true power of the three old men, he wouldn't know either. He now knew that there were different levels above the highest level of Dao Origin Stage. Only people in great sects had the chance to cultivate those three phases. The three factions were difficult to defeat.

All the people that Shangguan Zhuifeng could think of as their allies, together, were still unable to defeat even one of the three factions. That was the cruel reality!

It was frustrating indeed!

"If you say so... You must have your reasons to say so... I and my people will obey... Hmm. About Guan Lingxiao, he loves Black Cavalry Alliance. He has always wanted to join us. I guess I will just take him in this time." Shangguan Zhuifeng smiled. "He has a

big and stupid mouth, but he has a certain capability. He has an honest heart. That's a valuable thing."

Ye Xiao was surprised about it.

He didn't expect Guan Lingxiao to really become a member of Black Cavalry Alliance.

...

[1] Cang Gulang, means grey lonely wolf.

Chapter 906: Sky Soul Mountain!

"Even the finest feast must come to an end. You and your son are both well now. It only takes time to fully recover. It doesn't really matter whether I am around or not. I guess I should go."

Ye Xiao was always not niggling.

"Hmm. Please wait a minute. I have one more question... I wanted to ask you earlier, Brother Ye... However..." Shangguan Zhuifeng seemed hesitating. He looked at Ye Xiao's face and said, "I wonder... which of the two honorable brothers was your..."

Ye Xiao was riding on Darky. He squinted at Shangguan Zhuifeng, with weirdness and coldness in the eyes.

After a while, he blandly said, "Shangguan, the rats among you have been removed. However, I don't think they can do such damage to you by themselves. Who's out there? I guess you know better than I do.

"Take care. We might meet again.

"As for who I am... You will know when the time comes. One more thing, I promise you, when you know who exactly I am, you will be astonished."

After that, Ye Xiao kicked on the side of Darky. Darky neighed loudly and then rushed out like a shooting arrow. After seconds, they disappeared in the horizon.

Shangguan Zhuifeng was trembling. His eyes nearly popped out of the eye frames.

Suddenly, he had an extremely horrible thought.

He thought of an extremely horrible person.

An extremely absurd but terrific possibility appeared in his head.

However, he didn't dare to say anything, not even think further of it. He decided to bury the thought deep in his heart.

"About Brother Ye, nobody speak anything about him. Keep it a secret. Nothing about him should be leaked! Whoever divulge anything about him should be killed with his entire family!"

He made such an order in Black Cavalry Alliance.

People were all confused. However, Shangguan Zhuifeng was so determined, so they didn't dare to question it.

They thought maybe the Chief didn't want to bring troubles to Master Ye. It was reasonable. Master Ye was marvelous in dan-making and he had lots of valuable dan beads. It was easy for him to be targeted. It was a brilliant way to protect Master Ye by keeping his information a secret!

A few old men who had been following Shangguan Zhuifeng for many years noticed something different... They knew that their Chief wasn't worried or scared.

He was excited and thrilled!

Every time when there was a war going to happen and he was confident to win the battle... he would be excited and thrilled just like that!

Their great chief was obviously much more excited and thrilled than before...

...

Ye Xiao was back on the road to Sky Soul Mountain while riding Darky.

Oh, right. Not just him and Darky, there was a cat too. Erhuo was sitting on Ye Xiao's head right now.

His two white little paws were grabbing Ye Xiao's hairs. No matter how fast Darky was running, Erhuo stayed in the same pose.

Ye Xiao was riding a pony, with a cat on his head...

That was such a hilarious image that whoever saw him couldn't

stop smiling.

They were finally close to Sky Soul Mountain.

It took Ye Xiao one month, even though Darky was running so fast, to reach Sky Soul Mountain.

During the one month, lots of things had happened. Martial world in the Qing-Yun Realm was much troublesome than the Land of Han-Yang for real. There were countless of bandits and thieves. Experienced and smart like Ye Xiao, he still didn't avoid them all.

He surely wanted to avoid facing any of these men, but he had no choice sometimes. So he would fight if he was confident he could win. If he wasn't, he would run away. As long as he ran as fast as he could, those small figures in this realm could never catch up with him.

If somebody truly caught up with him even when he was operating One Laughter in Skyline, that somebody must be much better than just a bandit!

Ye Xiao thought that he would probably avoid most of the fights. In other words, he would have to fight the way along.

He sighed. He had been away from the realm for less than two years. However, he felt that the martial world was much more disordered. He remembered in the previous life, one would never have to face so many fights on the road...

"Human hearts are not what they were in the old days..." Ye Xiao sighed.

Well, he must be a retard. In his previous life, he was the world-shocking Xiao Monarch. He flew here and there so fast wherever he went. Bandits and thieves would never be able to even see him on the road.

Even if he walked on the road, the murderous qi around him would suppress the area of three miles. How could any small

figures dare to stand on his way?

Human hearts were not changed at all. He was just too weak at the moment. Even cats and dogs dared to piss him...

Anyways, the fights on the road were good for him, although he had less time to rest and enjoy the view.

After the fights one after another, he was improved to level four of Dream Origin Stage now.

In fact, he even tried to hold the improvement a bit, not to break through too fast. Even so, he was two levels higher now.

He could feel that as his cultivation capability was improving, the East-rising Purple Qi was also activating, especially when he reached level three.

He felt the massive change.

He tried to operate East-rising Purple Qi and found that the purple qi was filling his body. It was even going to be 'too full'.

If he could use the breakthrough to activate the upgrade of East-rising Purple Qi, he might be able to rush up to the upper phase of the second degree.

In other words, he might be able to reach the late phase of Purple Qi Descends.

He had been looking forward to it for quite a long time. He tried so hard to absorb every bit of spiritual qi that he could every day, and at the same time, he suppressed the breakthrough of his basic cultivation.

He had to make his cultivation foundation strong and firm so that once he started to rush on the East-rising Purple Qi, he could have a bigger chance to succeed.

Ye Xiao knew that Dream Origin Stage, Dao Origin Stage and all the other stages in basic cultivation were nothing for him.

Only East-rising Purple Qi was the essence of his true power!

Eventually, Ye Xiao was one step away from Sky Soul Mountain.

He was now standing on top of the mountain beside Sky Soul Mountain. He looked at the thick clouds covering the mountainside of Sky Soul Mountain. Suddenly, he frowned. He looked fierce and murderous!

...

Chapter 907: Sky Soul Precipice!

Sky Soul Mountain. There was a branch of Saint Sunlight Sect on Sky Soul Mountain at the moment, with many people on guard.

Ye Xiao spent a few days around the mountain to dig out the information of these people. Surprisingly, he got to know that Saint Sunlight Sect hadn't extracted a bit of soul power from the mountain since they seized it.

Whoever knew about soul power could clearly sense the enormous amount of soul power inside the mountain. However, they just couldn't get it. They could certainly feel it even see it, but they just couldn't have it. That was such an annoying feeling that troubled every one of the people in Saint Sunlight Sect. In nearly two years, they had tried countless things, but ended up sacrificing four level seven Dao Origin Stage cultivators for nothing!

Soul power was a peculiar power. It was rather powerful in the hands of those who knew how to make good use of it. However, people who weren't truly good at it might get themselves hurt, even killed when trying to get it!

To collect soul power, one should be at least level seven of Dao Origin Stage. That meant any mistakes they made would lead to a loss of at least one level seven cultivator, or severe damage to at least one level seven cultivator.

For two years, some of the cultivators from Saint Sunlight Sect were severely damaged after they tried and failed to collect the soul power. Luckily or not, some of them survived unharmed, while the others were dead. Soul power was still full inside Sky Soul Mountain. Nobody ever touched it!

The mountain had become a restricted area of Saint Sunlight Sect. However, whoever in the sect heard that they were assigned to go the Sky Soul Mountain and try to collect the soul power from it, they would suddenly suffer serious diseases. No exceptions.

Of course. The soul power belonged to the sect, while their lives belonged to themselves. They surely should protect themselves first! It was such a stupid thing to do to accept that assignment and risk their lives to try something that was most likely going to fail.

The leadership of Saint Sunlight Sect didn't blame them. They understood. After all, four regretful examples had been shown to them vividly. There was a huge amount of soul power in Sky Soul Mountain. However, there were other places where they could collect soul power too. They didn't have to push their superior cultivators to risk their lives. Since nobody wanted to go anymore, they didn't assign anybody now!

Day after day, Sky Soul Mountain completely became a training place. The young generation of Saint Sunlight Sect would come to this place to be trained. However, none of the cultivator above Dao Origin Stage would come.

It became a branch of their sect that had lots of people but in fact powerless.

In the beginning, Saint Sunlight Sect still wanted to keep it a secret. As time passed, they stopped focusing on this place. The low-level disciples who were training there stopped keeping the secret. Day after day, the secret became a well-known secret!

When Ye Xiao heard it, he felt relieved.

There was not even one Dao Origin Stage cultivator from Saint Sunlight Sect. Facing a level nine Dream Origin Stage disciple of theirs, he would still be safe, even though he was only level four. He might not be able to defeat a level nine, but it was not a problem to escape safely.

The only problem was... he planned to sneak into the mountain. If he was really going to have a fight, even though he could safely run away from it, his plan would fail.

One more thing, he wanted to reach Sky Soul Precipice. It was

the top of Sky Soul Mountain, covered by clouds and fog all year. Nobody had ever gone down the cliff alive before. That was why nobody knew how high the cliff was. Nobody knew what was down there.

Ye Xiao didn't just hear about the cliff. He once checked it before. One day, he was drinking with Li Wuliang. After a few cups of liquor, they suddenly wanted to know how high the cliff was and what was down there. Two level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators jumped down the cliff, laughing groggily.

Well, it took them one full day.

Sky Soul Precipice was a lacunal cliff. They just jumped off it directly and didn't crash on anything at all...

It took them one full day of falling till they felt like retreating. What was the height?

Nobody knew.

They both wanted to reach the end and see what was so magical down there. However, after falling for one full day and tens of thousands of meters... they still couldn't see anything except darkness. Suddenly, they felt like their souls were hit. They felt headache and they even felt their own soul power was being blown away.

Farther as they fell, longer as they kept falling, stronger they felt being suppressed.

They surely both were tough men. They wouldn't give up because of the hardship. So they kept falling for another thirty meters. However, they didn't feel quite well after that. Even though they had started to operate joint energy to fight against that suppression, they didn't make it. They nearly died in the precipice that day.

Now as Ye Xiao thought of it, he still felt frightened. He still remembered the wild wind that kept blowing everywhere. It

wasn't strong, more like a breeze, but it blew so deep on his soul. It was blowing his soul away.

He didn't strongly feel it at the beginning, but when they fell down another thirty meters, it was getting more and more seriously dangerous. When they both felt ill and wanted to retreat, they were almost powerless. The two of them luckily both had strong will. They supported each other and started to climb up. The two great cultivators nearly died in this untraversed land just like that!

They supported each other and climbed up fifty meters until they didn't feel the suppression. Suddenly, the strength was back and they got up to the mountain awkwardly.

After that, they both never ever mentioned this again. Not even once. It was such a disgrace for them, so they wouldn't talk about it.

In fact, when they were having a secret conversation, sometimes they would imply it to tease one another.

"Oh you think you have guts? Why don't you go down there and see!"

"Why don't you go down there? If you go down there now, I promise I approve you're braver than me!"

"How about a bet? Huh? Who loses go down there again."

"I will make no bet on such a thing!"

...

Chapter 908: His Lady Came For Revenge!

The image of Ye Xiao and Li Wuliang laughing and talking appeared in Ye Xiao's head. Ye Xiao looked in the distance with a smile on his face.

Saint Sunlight Sect planned on snatching Sky Soul Mountain after that. The great Fierce Blade was seriously damaged and fell down the cliff. His body was never found.

Ye Xiao was afraid that his old friend had already...

After all, when he was level nine of Dao Origin Stage, he and Li Wuliang couldn't endure the unbelievable effect of the wind in Sky Soul Precipice. When Li Wuliang fell off the cliff, he was seriously wounded... How could he survive that...

...

At dusk.

Ye Xiao was like a cat as he sneaked into Sky Soul Mountain quietly.

There was a real cat sneaking in front of him though. Yes. Erhuo!

Erhuo must be the best expert at sneaking in the entire Qing-Yun Realm!

Hmm... An expert cat.

A man and a cat, they got into the forest on the mountain. Erhuo suddenly alerted him in a low voice. Ye Xiao got down and hid behind a bush.

He had just covered his trace and suddenly, he felt a strong mass of qi sweeping past over his head.

That strong qi was murderous. It was rushing over to the top of Sky Soul Mountain!

It seemed clouds were following it, rolling up in the sky!

He was shocked. He hurriedly jumped up to see what was making this happen. What he saw was a slim figure of a woman shooting over to the top of the mountain!

She was beautiful, cold, and bland. She looked peaceful but full of horror.

Ye Xiao froze as if he got stricken by a lightning!

He was stiff, standing there, wanting to shout but just couldn't. He felt a riot in his heart.

He suddenly felt bitter in the eyes.

It was his tears coming out.

Jun Yinglian!

"Lian Lian!"

Ye Xiao gave up hiding and jumped up high, operating One Laughter in Skyline trying to catch up with her.

He knew Jun Yinglian wouldn't recognize him like this, but he still rushed over!

[I want to tell you that I am Ye Xiao.]

[I want to tell you that I won't fail you again!]

[I want to tell you that I liked you as I do in previous life...]

He felt the heat in his heart as if it was melting in magma.

One Laughter in Skyline was a top class flying skill, but he was too much weaker than Jun Yinglian at the moment. When he jumped up, Jun Yinglian had long gone. What was left behind her was only the exclamation of people.

Ye Xiao kept chasing her. What he could see were dead bodies of people from Saint Sunlight Sect.

Every one of them was killed by one sword in the heart. The mountain was suddenly filled with sword breath.

Jun Yinglian actually didn't even say a word when she started the killing.

All Saint Sunlight Sect disciples were dead.

Ye Xiao was still chasing. He was sweating when he saw the dead men.

If he came here earlier and stayed on Sky Soul Mountain... Jun Yinglian would have very possibly killed him too...

Hiding in the bush, he did look like a guarding disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect.

He was far too weak to stand one attack from Jun Yinglian. He would die!

If he died like that, he would die with a grudge.

However, heavens blessed him. He was a bit late to catch with the death, luckily!

When Ye Xiao finally rushed up the to the top f the mountain, what he saw was a scene full of dead bodies on the floor and broken walls.

Jun Yinglian was gone.

There was a stone stele.

On the stele, some words were deeply carved on it. There were stone ashes in the notch. It was full of murderous qi!

Apparently, Jun Yinglian wrote it with her sword.

'Laughing at all heroes in the world!'

There were no other living things on the mountain anymore except for Ye Xiao and Erhuo!

Sky Soul Mountain became a mountain of death.

Far away in the sky, the cloud was rolling, moving apart and joining again. A shadow of a person flashed and disappeared.

The person had gone, yet the rolling murderous qi was shocking the clouds in the sky. It was like a furious dragon shouting and raging in the cloud like crazy.

Jun Yinglian left.

She came and left with only her sword.

Wherever she passed, only blood and corpses were left!

...

Ye Xiao stood in front of that stele. His heart was filled with complex feelings. He was totally at a loss. He didn't know where he should start. He felt his eyes wet and his nose sour.

He closed his mouth and then opened it again. He took a deep breath again and again, forcibly suppressing the strong emotion in his heart.

However, as he tried to suppress it, it raged up even more. Again and again, he finally couldn't hold it anymore. With a long sigh, he put a finger on the carved stele and went through every word she wrote. There was the ash on his hand.

"Laughing... at all... heroes in the world..."

Ye Xiao murmured with blank eyes.

"Lian Lian..." He closed his eyes and sorrowfully spoke.

...

Jun Yinglian was moving in the sky. Her blank face was dripping tears. When she started to kill on the mountain, she heard a familiar voice calling her 'Lian Lian'.

But she knew it must be her illusion.

Ye Xiao was dead.

She chose Sky Soul Mountain to be the first place to kill, just because it was on her way. It just happened to be where everything started.

[Is Xiao Xiao calling me? Does he know I am taking revenge for him now?]

[I just started to swing my sword, and he called my name... Xiao Xiao, you still care for me...]

[Even though it was just my illusion, I believe you know I am taking revenge here, no matter where your soul stays.]

[We are going to be together again.]

She looked sad but determined. There was a smile on her beautiful face.

[I am coming...]

[Wait for me!]

The cloud was rolling apart. Strong winds in the sky dried her tears on the face. She didn't look back. She just went through the clouds and left...

Her sword had been unsheathed for revenge!

[Ye Xiao, I am going to kill till the world is in chaos, until the sky is in blood!]

...

Sky Soul Precipice.

Ye Xiao stood in front of the rolling cloud. He was lost in thoughts of the past.

It felt like the old days.

The big rock was still there, which was flat and square-shaped. That was their table when they were drinking in the old days.

He and Li Wuliang, each on a side, drank and laughed.

He was lost. Suddenly, he felt like he had seen the Xiao Monarch in white clothes sitting with Fierce Blade in black, talking and laughing, teasing each other.

The precipice was right there beside them.

Strong winds blew up their white and black clothes.

They were both heroic, looking down upon the entire world!

Fierce Blade conquered the world; Xiao Monarch mocked all heroes!

The two of them joining together could be invincible!

"Li Wuliang, how does it feel to stay alone down there? You have been traveling your whole life. I bet you never knew you would become an isolated spirit at the end, do you?"

Ye Xiao took a long breath.

Erhuo was squatting on that big rock. It looked confused, moving its cute little head, grabbing its white tail into the mouth. It made a somersault from time to time.

It didn't know why its master was so sad about a rock, like an idiot.

[Human... what a confusing creature.] Erhuo thought, [Over there, looking at the stone, he sighed and sighed. Now he is sighing to this rock... I don't understand... What he feels sad about some rocks for... They are just two normal rocks... There is nothing spiritual in it... Does he have to treat them like this?]

"Meow? Meow, meow?" Erhuo lost its patience. It didn't make somersaults anymore. It started to meow.

Unexpectedly, right after it started to meow, its master suddenly jumped off the cliff after staying still for a long time.

Erhuo was stunned.

[Holy heavens! I was just urging you a little bit... Why did you do this? Suicide? Holy... f*ck... No..." It rushed over to him but already lost sight of him down in the precipice.

Erhuo was so worried that without any hesitation, it jumped off

the cliff too, waving its tail, leaving a sound of 'meow' behind.

...

Chapter 909: Jumped Off the Cliff

Ye Xiao jumping off the cliff seemed abrupt. In fact, it wasn't his first time. He slightly moved ahead and started to fall along the cliff. After falling for about fifty meters, he reached out his hands and they became like two sharp weapons stabbing into the steep.

He stopped right in the air.

He moved his feet to find somewhere to stand on. As expected, his feet touched a rock. He stood on it and took a breath. [Luckily, it is still here.]

Sky Soul Precipice.

When he and Li Wuliang was climbing up, they were so cautious that they would stop to rest for a while from time to time. They made many spots to stand on from time to time, so as they could stop to rest.

Besides, they thought they might need to go down there again someday.

However, before they had the chance to do this again, both of them died.

These spots that they made became a secret in the world.

Only Ye Xiao and Li Wuliang knew about this!

They didn't do a good job making these spots. After all, they just needed somewhere they could step on.

If there were people on the mountain looking down, they might still not find the spots... because they were so raw... Besides, the spots were at least fifty meters away from each other... Nobody could find them from up on the mountain.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath and started to go on falling. Suddenly, he heard a sound of meow. A small white figure was rushing down from over his head.

Erhuo expected to stop somewhere when it jumped. However, there was nothing to stand on. All that it went through was clouds. It kept falling faster and faster, with its four paws waving in the air. Erhuo panicked. It was scared.

"Meowwww..."

[I am so going to die because of my stupid master...]

Ye Xiao saw it, and he reacted fast. He reached out one hand and made an absorbing power in the hand. - Shoot! - Erhuo was grabbed and held on Ye Xiao's arms.

It was a short time that Erhuo was in danger, but that gave Erhuo a deep impression of death. It felt like coming back from hell just within seconds. Its hairs all stood up because it was too frightened. It was shaking in Ye Xiao's arms.

"Meow... Meow, meow... Meow..." Erhuo meowed in a shaking voice. It didn't even know what it was saying.

Ye Xiao could feel the fear in this bodacious little guy at this moment. It was huddling in his arms. He had never seen it like this before...

"Erhuo, you idiot. I never knew you could be scared like this. Do you dare to still be so bodacious..." Ye Xiao smiled and tapped on Erhuo's wet nose with a finger.

"Meow..." Erhuo rolled up its eyes and squinted at Ye Xiao.
"Meow..."

[Holy heavens and hell! That sacred the shxt out of me!]

[This stupid cliff is actually this high...]

Ye Xiao laughed. He couldn't stop smiling at Erhuo.

He knew it Erhuo must have been frightened to hell this time.

In fact, Erhuo did have a way to save itself. For example, it could enter Boundless Space immediately. However, it panicked and was out of wits because of the fear. One could hardly make a right

choice under an emergent situation. Erhuo was a spiritual beast indeed, but it made no difference!

Ye Xiao held Erhuo in his arms and started to fall down along the cliff. Fifty meters, a hundred meters... he did it step by step.

He kept his back on the steep while he was falling. The muscle on his back was like a tentacle touching the cliff. He could quickly get away from the cliff but still stay close enough when he needed to be.

He moved so smoothly and cautiously.

After the three months of special training, he could control every piece of his muscle perfectly. Even when he was getting down a cliff like this, he could make use of every part of his body perfectly!

After a while, after he had fallen about seven thousand meters, the wet and cold feeling hit him again. It was getting worse. Ye Xiao gasped and reached his hand to touch the cliff. It seemed he was looking for something. He operated the East-rising Purple Qi to drag a mass of earth on the cliff and then threw it down.

It was actually a small entrance of a cave. He didn't seem surprised at all. He got into the cave without any hesitation.

He made this small cave. When he and Li Wuliang were climbing up the cliff, they felt exhausted when they reached this height. Ye Xiao tried so hard and dug a cave in this place for them to both rest for half a day.

The entrance was covered by dust because it had been so long since they made it.

Ye Xiao got into the cave and it felt pretty spacious. That was reasonable. It was enough for two men to stay, but now he was alone.

Erhuo was still shaking. It showed up in Ye Xiao's arms as it noticed Ye Xiao wasn't moving anymore. It stepped on a rock to test if it was firm before it got off of Ye Xiao.

It walked a few steps and made sure it was standing on the floor.

It became elegant and arrogant again, walking around in the cave. It looked much more relieved.

It raised up its paw and walked to the entrance. It looked up and down then meowed. At last, it started to wave its tail because it was happy now.

"Meow... Meow, meow... Meow, meow oh.."

Erhuo was trying to say something.

[Oh this cliff turns out to be this type. If I knew it earlier, I would have walked down the cliff like walking on the flat floor. Such a piece of cake!]

Ye Xiao was indifferent about it. [You surely know how to boast,]

[What a belated pledge you can make. You can surely say whatever you like now. I have to say I like to see you being frightened like that... You idiot...]

...

Chapter 910: Red and White Clouds

Ye Xiao looked at Erhuo. Erhuo was acting like it was so powerful and brilliant. Ye Xiao took a bite of his solid food. He reached out one hand and suddenly grabbed Erhuo's neck. He swung Erhuo in the hand as if he was going to throw it out the cave.

Erhuo had experienced the horror earlier. It understood what would possibly happen to it, so it meowed and started to tremble. Its hairs stood up with fear again.

Ye Xiao humped and put it into his pocket. "Boast now, huh? Remember you are just a cat. Why do you have to be arrogant like a human being?"

Erhuo stayed in the pocket, curling up, moaning, "Meow... Meow, meow... Meow..."

It looked so cute, but at the same time, piteous. If any girl saw that, she would probably fight Ye Xiao for the little cat and try to overturn Ye Xiao's brutal reign...

However, there was only one human in the cave. Hmm, not anymore. Ye Xiao had left the cave and fell down again... - Shoot! -

...

After a long time.

Ye Xiao suddenly stopped. He thought, [I have been rushing down like this for eight hours already. I have almost reached the place where we stopped.]

[I am in a different cultivation level than before, but this is just sliding down. We fell down as long as this. I should be certainly near the place we stopped right now!]

However, he was level nine of Dao Origin Stage in the previous life. Even in the dark, he could still see things clearly. Ye Xiao couldn't do it now. However, he had Yin Yang Eyes. He looked

ahead and saw the red and white clouds as expected. He sometimes would dream of it. It was mostly nightmares. The red and white clouds were right beneath him. He was a bit scared, no matter how brave he was, because he had experienced this before.

He remembered everything about that red and white clouds. He was still terrified by it.

The red and white clouds were the biggest problem in this area.

It seemed like normal clouds just like wind could blow it away.

In fact, it was half-solid. It just stuck in the halfway of the cliff. Not to mention wind, even if the mountain was blown down, the clouds might still be there. It might just flow up and down slightly. That was all.

It couldn't be divided. It couldn't be dispersed. It couldn't be parted. There was simply nothing one could do with it.

However, it was not just a barrier that couldn't be broken. In the red and white clouds, there was a mass of strange power. It had no effects on human body, but a huge pulling power to human soul!

No matter how powerful one was in cultivation, nobody could fight this power. At least Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade failed to!

The two of them had discussed this clouds afterwards. They thought that the reason they couldn't fight the power in the clouds was that it only interacted with the human soul.

Cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm, no matter what martial art they cultivated and how they cultivated, none of them cultivated on their souls. They couldn't control their souls to operate anything. Their souls were merely improved when their cultivation level was upgraded. That was why even the two super powerful cultivators couldn't resist the pulling of that clouds.

The further they were pulled into the red and white clouds, the stronger the pulling power was. When they were one third into the center of the clouds, the power became extremely strong, as if it

would break all mountains and tear the sky apart!

No matter how strong their souls were, even though they were in the highest level of Dao Origin Stage, they were lucky not to be destroyed at once by such a power.

That was a huge problem back then.

They had suffered such a powerful strike when they entered the red and white clouds. They nearly died in the clouds.

This time, he was back to this place and he was in level four of Dream Origin Stage. He was so much weaker than the last time. How long could he hold on in the clouds?

No matter how long he could hold it, he must try. He had to persevere.

"His body must be nearby. I have to bury him properly!" He took a deep breath and his breath actually made the clouds slightly shaking. "My brother dominated the world when he was alive. He was a hero. He loved and he killed, but he never took even one innocent life. He was a true hero. Now he is dead, and I won't allow his body to be wandering in the wild!"

"I have to do this!"

He took a long breath. He looked so determined.

He took one step ahead so as to do a cautious test.

He had to get in it, but he didn't have to be reckless. Caution was always needed. He couldn't let himself die, because he had to take his brother's body back. It was necessary that he did it step by step, slowly and carefully!

It was just like what he remembered. The red and white clouds seemed moving aside to let him in. He placed one foot into the clouds as if reaching into a mass of normal cloud.

However, when he truly touched it, he felt dizzy all of a sudden. In fact, he felt dizzy and then became sober repeatedly.

It was just a bit dizzy. He could actually ignore it, but he could still feel it.

He knew the pulling power of the clouds was affecting him. It was only the beginning, so it didn't have a great effect. Even though he was only level four of Dream Origin Stage, he could still handle it.

Back at the previous time, the both of them were drunk, so they didn't truly feel the power at the beginning. When they finally felt it, it was almost strong enough to break them.

...

Chapter 911: Sky Soul Power Aura

This time, he remained extremely vigilant. When he just started to feel dizzy, he operated East-rising Purple Qi in full power immediately!

He knew that normal martial art wouldn't help to deal with such a strange energy. He was afraid none of the martial arts in Qing-Yun Realm could deal with the energy of the red and white clouds.

However, East-rising purple Qi was the peerless primary martial art in the universe. It was the reason why he dared to try this.

As East-rising Purple Qi was operated, a mass of purple light glowed around Ye Xiao. Purple qi filled his body. Ye Xiao's eyes were shining in some spiritual glow. He was looking at his feet which had stepped on the clouds.

He took a breath of relief and then made a sigh.

[I don't feel dizzy anymore the moment East-rising Purple Qi started running. Obviously, East-rising Purple Qi is effective against this energy. Yin Yang Eyes makes me partly see through the clouds. That is much better. At least I don't have to be blind in the dark. However, the energy seems to have wisdom. It is aiming at one place to attack. East-rising Purple Qi had built a shield to cover my ankles. It's fine now, but the clouds must be attacking it. The shield won't last long.]

[It would last no longer than a few breaths for the clouds to break the shield of the purple qi. The energy would still get into my body and start to pull my soul away. I will be unable to resist it like I used to be. That is a failure.]

[The East-rising Purple Qi is working on the energy of the clouds, but I am too weak to deal with the strange clouds myself.]

[I guess this is why Saint Sunlight Sect kept failing in collecting the soul power in the mountain.]

Ye Xiao looked at the slight glowing purple light on his feet. He felt helpless in the bottom of his heart.

To completely handle the red and white clouds, he must improve his East-rising Purple Qi to a much higher level. He had to work much harder on it. With such a thought in mind, he knew that his goal today should be put on hold. If he forcibly kept going into the clouds, he might lose further chance to make more attempts!

"Brother, I wanted to come to see you and take you home... But... I never thought it would be this difficult..." He took a long breath.

At this moment, unexpectedly, Erhuo showed its small head from its pocket. It started to roll its eyeballs up and down. It seemed it found something.

The next moment, it reached out its two paws as its ears started to wave. That was so cute.

After that, it meowed and then jumped out from Ye Xiao's pocket. It stared at the red and white clouds with two widely opened eyes.

After a while, it unintentionally raised up one paw and slowly rubbed the whisker on its cheeks. It first looked confused and shocked, and then it started to be enlightened. In the end, it was surprised and delighted. A few changes in its eyes only took an instant. What a fast eyes expression changing expert!

Ye Xiao didn't know what the cat was going to do. He knew Erhuo was quite magical sometimes, but he had no idea what was in its mind. He couldn't stop it anyway, so it decided to let it go. He was going to retreat anyway. Maybe Erhuo could bring him a surprising opportunity.

Erhuo reached out one paw and hit the air. It looked like fighting nothing.

[What is that? What does that mean? What is going on?]

Ye Xiao was confused. Before he asked, he found the red and

white clouds moved! A stream of clouds came out and wrapped its paw.

Erhuo raised the paw and watched the clouds. It seemed it was studying it. Its ears kept flicking. That made it look more adorable.

Ye Xiao was surprised!

[How... How did Erhuo... grab that cloud out?]

[Isn't it untouchable?]

He thought for a while and started to try reaching his hand into the clouds. He stirred it carefully.

He found that he could also feel the clouds. It was right there, but when he withdrew his hand, there was nothing he could take out. He only felt dizzy.

"I can't handle the clouds, but Erhuo can!" Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes. He murmured, "What a peerless spiritual beast in chaos... Marvelous technique... It may just be a cat, but... it is a marvelous cat at least right here right now..."

Erhuo frowned.

Something changed on its forehead. Hmm... Three stripes showed up on its forehead. There was usually nothing on its forehead, but now it looked just like a tiger.

That meant it was angry. It was pissed that Ye Xiao looked down upon it.

[How dare you look down upon me!] Erhuo raged up. "Meow!"

- Pah! -

Ye Xiao slapped on Erhuo's small head without hesitation. Erhuo spun several times because of the slap. "Stop the bullshit already! Just tell me what is going on!"

Erhuo was slapped. That pissed it so bad. It raged up furiously and showed the sharp claws in its paws, with its teeth out, looking

at Ye Xiao. It didn't remain long before Ye Xiao slapped it again. It spun in the air like a ball again. That was more than several rounds this time.

He grabbed Erhuo on the neck and lifted it as if it was a dry fish. "Are you done? Tell me or you will fall to the bottom of this cliff!"

"Meow..." Erhuo submitted.

[Alright. I am a cat with a strong will. I can endure the present insult and wait for a better opportunity to revenge. Wait and see, you stupid master. When I become greatly stronger later, I will make you see your mistakes...]

[Wait. What can I do when I become stronger?]

[Damn it. No matter how strong I am, it benefits him at the end. Stupid bastard brutal fart master!]

[He always gets benefit!]

[Fxck!]

...

Chapter 912: Chaotic Soul Clouds!

Erhuo finally realized the cruel truth, but no matter how angry it was, it still told Ye Xiao. It talked and made gestures to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao had been with Erhuo for a long time. It didn't take Erhuo much time to make Ye Xiao understand what was going on.

Things seemed difficult to the one who didn't know the trick in it. Sometimes, an expert was necessary to help figure out the truth. Ye Xiao knew nothing about the clouds, but luckily, Erhuo was an expert of such a thing. It basically figured out most of the secret about the red and white clouds!

"This is Sky Soul Power Aura, which is extremely rare... This place is like hell in human world. It naturally affected human soul.

"People under Dao Origin Stage cultivators, who haven't cultivate any martial arts to strengthen their souls, would have their souls torn into pieces and become retards. Some of them may instantly die with their souls broken into pieces. Dao Origin Stage cultivators maybe much stronger in souls than normal people, but they still can't defend themselves from this power aura.

"The closer as they get to the center of the clouds, the stronger power they will suffer. If anybody gets too close to it, even a super-powerful Dao Origin Stage cultivator will be soul-vanished at once.

"The power aura is formed for a reason. For a certain period of time, which must be a very very long time, there used to be countless superior cultivators fighting in this place. There are too many people who died in here. Their soul power stayed in this place. As time passed by, the power gathered together and became this special power aura. It is not easy to form this kind of clouds. You can imagine how powerful it can be. It is beyond the endurance of any Qing-Yun Realm cultivators."

Ye Xiao was shocked, "Holy mother heavens. Is it truly so overwhelming? Well... those cultivators... died here... how strong

were they though? Level nine of Dao Origin Stage... like the people in Cold Moon Palace... are they strong enough?"

Erhuo disdainfully glanced at Ye Xiao. It made movement with its paw. "Meow... Pooooh!"

It actually simulated the sound of a fart.

What it meant, 'Those people that you think are strong enough, in front of those who died here, whose power became part of this magnificent power aura, are just like fart... In fact, your words are like fart...'

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was suddenly speechless.

However, he felt lucky. [That was close. I was going to suggest myself... Erhuo would have humiliated me to death. I was a little bit stronger than the men in Cold Moon Palace... That is surely better. But if they are like fart... wouldn't I be... something smellier... Damn it!]

[I can't mention myself!]

Suddenly, he came up with an important question.

"Wait... The ancient souls that you mentioned... Are they still here? I mean are they conscious?"

It was quite important. If those men were still living as souls, they could have swallowed him instantly!

Moreover, for him, he cared about Brother Li the most. If those souls were alive, then Brother Li should still be conscious. His soul might stay even after he was physically dead!

It was such a complicated concept, life and death, soul and body!

"Meow, meow... Meow, meow, meow. Meow, meow, meow..." Erhuo was disdainful. It made several gestures and meowed again.

That was pretty easy to understand. 'How could soul powers be conscious?'

'The souls here are from so many thousand years earlier. All those souls have long mixed together in chaos. It would be terrible if they still had consciousness, wouldn't it? If the souls were conscious, they wouldn't become a mass of chaotic soul clouds. There is no singular soul inside the clouds for sure.'

"Chaotic soul clouds? What is that?" Ye Xiao asked.

It was his first time to hear about such thing.

"Yes. After lots of super powerful cultivators died and their souls came off the bodies in the same place, they wouldn't enter samsara right away because they were too powerful. This place had some special power that restrained their souls. Year after year, the souls were all converted into pure soul power. As the power accumulated more and more, they became the chaotic soul clouds. In other words, the clouds came from the souls of many super powerful cultivators..."

Erhuo seemed covetous at the moment.

"How many powerful cultivators does it need to make such a mass of clouds?" Ye Xiao looked at the boundless red and white clouds. He unbearably trembled.

"Look at the scale of the clouds here... I guess at least a hundred thousand super powerful men..." Erhuo waved its tail.

"A hundred thousand? A hundred thousand super powerful cultivators' souls?" Ye Xiao was frightened. He took a deep breath.

He was totally shocked by the enormous number.

According to what Erhuo said, even Xiao Monarch, a top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator, was only... a fart... compared to those super powerful figures... How powerful should those cultivators be in the old days?

One thousand super powerful cultivators died in this place?

Such an enormous number!

Besides...

"Why would the clouds appear in Qing-Yun Realm?" Ye Xiao was confused. "Even though these incredible cultivators might have fallen from their realms, they shouldn't all fall to Qing-Yun Realm. If there used to be people that were so powerful, one or two might be reasonable, but one hundred thousand of them in Qing-Yun Realm? That must be a tale after another! It doesn't make sense!"

He trusted Erhuo. If somebody else told him so, he wouldn't believe a word of it!

Erhuo meowed. Apparently, Erhuo didn't know the truth, either.

Erhuo looked at Ye Xiao as if it was begging. It kept rubbing its ears and whisker, looking to the clouds from time to time. It seemed suppressed.

Ye Xiao was enlightened. "Can you absorb the clouds?"

Erhuo couldn't wait. It nodded. "Meow!"

It looked arrogant again.

"That is useful for you?"

"Meow!"

"What are you waiting for then? Go! It's all yours!" Ye Xiao waved his hand. Such a casual move.

"Urh?" Erhuo never knew its master could be so generous to it. It couldn't believe it. It unbelievably looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Meow?"

...

Chapter 913: Massive Absorption

Ye Xiao was speechless and enlightened.

He was generous to Erhuo for once. In fact, he didn't know what to do with the clouds himself, even though he knew it was a marvelous energy. Erhuo was actually surprised.

"What are you waiting for? Go do it!"

Erhuo made sure Ye Xiao truly approved it. It was so happy and couldn't stop meowing. It ran round and round behind Ye Xiao for a while and rubbed Ye Xiao's clothes with its fur. It must be so happy about this.

"Meow!" Then it rushed into the red and white clouds.

"You stupid cat... Are you going to get yourself killed? What if you fall from there..." Before Ye Xiao finished, Erhuo started to float in the clouds. It didn't fall down, instead, it was enjoying it.

The clouds were actually firm like a piece of land. It held Erhuo perfectly.

Erhuo was moving among the clouds, its small body rolling up and down. It was running loose around the clouds.

After a while, the red and white clouds that used to look so firm and steady gradually became a mass of vortex.

Erhuo was right in the middle of it. Its four paws kept grabbing the air. As it grabbed, the vortex expanded. The center of the vortex gradually hollowed down and the clouds eventually became a huge funnel.

After the funnel was formed, all the red and white clouds started to run over to the funnel like crazy. It was like a vortex in the ocean, with ea water running to it rapidly. As the red and white clouds were coming fast, Erhuo opened its mouth and took a huge breath in. The countless red and white clouds became one huge

long dragon running and rolling into its mouth.

Ye Xiao was completely stunned. He couldn't believe what he saw. Such a little cat, with such a small mouth, actually swallowed such an enormous amount of red and white clouds like that.

Even though the clouds were loose, it still was a marvelous scene. That red and white clouds were not just some ordinary clouds. The energy of it was strong enough to kill so many super powerful cultivators. He had nearly died in this place. He couldn't believe Erhuo just swallowed the clouds like that.

The peerless No. 1 beast in the universe was not just a title. Erhuo was so shockingly awesome!

After a while, Erhuo made a burp. It surely had a great meal. It was too full to take anymore. However, there were still lots of clouds there. What Erhuo had swallowed was just about twenty percent.

Ye Xiao, however, was more than satisfied already. Twenty percent at once, that meant it would only take Erhuo four or five more times to finish all the clouds.

However, Erhuo didn't seem to stop even though it was full. It started to grab the air more industriously. The clouds below started to run up to it too...

[Holy heavens! What is it doing? You are full! You burped! You can't take more clouds! Why did you still stir the clouds? Where do you want to keep the clouds?]

Ye Xiao was confused, but then he felt something strange.

He found that the East-rising Purple Qi inside him was affected as the clouds were stirred.

After a while, he was hit by a thought. 'Something is happening in Boundless Space!' Erhuo could freely enter Boundless Space. It could open the entrance to the Boundless Space too. Did it keep the red and white clouds in the Boundless Space?

[Holy heavens! You are a spiritual beast of the universe. Of course, you can handle the clouds in your stomach. Are you sure Boundless Space could handle that? Even if you can keep all the clouds in Boundless Space, are you sure it won't hurt the Space? It can even affect East-rising Purple Qi!]

Ye Xiao hurriedly checked the Space, and then he was frightened. The Boundless Space was filled with lots of red and white clouds. More and more clouds were getting in. After a while, the Space was full.

The next moment, masses of purple qi showed up from the walls of the Space and started to crash the clouds.

Purple qi and the clouds hit each other and made small sounds. Unexpectedly, as the two masses of energy crashed, the red and white clouds disappeared.

Ye Xiao was surprised. How come the terrifying clouds would disappear after being hit by the purple qi in the Space? The purple qi was losing when he operated it out there!

Ye Xiao was an experienced cultivator. He was soon enlightened. The purple qi that was losing out before was based on his own weak strength. It was too weak. Even so, that purple qi still defended him for a while from the invasion of the clouds. It turned out the purple qi was actually stronger than the clouds.

When the clouds entered the Boundless Space, the purple qi inside was much stronger than the purple qi Ye Xiao could operate. The purple qi was the purest and heaviest in the Space. That was why the purple qi in the Space was overwhelming the red and white clouds thoroughly!

The red and white clouds didn't bring threats to the Space. However, because of the sudden situation, more and more purple qi appeared inside the Space...

Apparently, Boundless Space converted the soul power in red and

white clouds into purple qi. Ye Xiao could feel the joyfulness of the Space.

[What? Was that my illusion? How could Boundless Space have an emotion...]

While he was thinking, the purple qi from the Space started to rush into his Jing and Mai like crazy. After the purple qi rushed over every corner of his Jing and Mai, it returned to the Space. However, there was a part of it that stayed in his dantian.

That was extremely pure purple qi. Even a little bit of it was good for him!

Besides, that was only the first wave. There was lots of purple qi coming up after that... It kept rushing into Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai again and again...

The red and white clouds were destroyed and converted when they just entered the Space. The clouds kept pouring in because Erhuo didn't stop stirring the clouds. The red and white clouds outside were like a rolling ocean. The clouds kept rushing into Boundless Space, and more and more purple qi showed up. That kept the purple qi rush over his Jing and Mai.

Ye Xiao was down in the precipice. He could see the clouds reducing fast. He was moving down again. He stopped feeling dizzy anymore now.

Chapter 914: Full Mountain of Bones!

In his Jing and Mai, the purple qi kept rushing over. It even made a bickering sound as if a riptide rushing over a narrow gully.

Ye Xiao felt the change inside his Jing and Mai. He felt so good that he nearly exclaimed out loud. With that wonderful feeling, he got down the cliff even faster.

As he went down a hundred meters more, there were more red and white clouds. He felt dizzy again.

Ye Xiao shouted and Erhuo suddenly rushed down like a shooting arrow. It started to stir the clouds again. Erhuo actually brought the vortex down. It was like a huge tail of the sky reaching down to the bottom of the precipice.

The big tail was shaking at first and then the huge mass of red and white clouds moved with it. It was much more drastic than the last time.

It was not just louder. The soul power this time was even stronger than the last time.

The red and white clouds here were purer than the former!

Erhuo meowed! It seemed quite excited. Its tail stood up like a flagpole. Its eyes were wider than usual.

[This is awesome! Meow!]

[This is so incredible!]

[I have never felt so good before!]

While Erhuo was stirring the clouds, Ye Xiao didn't stop getting down deeper.

It took him one and half more days to get down deeper.

He had been operating Yin Yang Eyes, but the clouds were more or less covering his sight. He didn't know how long it had been.

However, powerful as he was, he could still roughly guess the time.

It was more than one and half days. He was sure, because he felt hungry now.

It was somehow certainly accurate to calculate the time by the feeling of his stomach!

It took a long time to withdraw all the red and white clouds into Boundless Space.

As the last bit of clouds entered the Space, Erhuo followed it in as soon as it could.

Apparently, it was exhausted.

It was indeed excited, but it was tired. Ye Xiao clearly felt Erhuo sweating at the end. The sweat nearly ruined its clean and beautiful white fur.

Apparently, it was totally burned out.

However, Erhuo was still quite happy about it.

Soul power had great use for Erhuo, but it was useless for Ye Xiao.

In fact, after being converted by the Boundless Space, it became something that benefitted both of them!

Of course, Erhuo didn't like to share it to others, even to Ye Xiao. However, there were too many red and white clouds. It couldn't take them all. Erhuo knew it could never take all the energy, but it didn't want it to be wasted in this precipice. That was why it worked so hard to collect them all.

The soul power Erhuo had absorbed was less than one percent of all the red and white clouds in the Space.

That was some soul power from at least one hundred thousand super powerful cultivators!

If the power belonged to one man, this man must be more powerful than billions of ordinary people.

No matter how good Erhuo was, it was still at a young age. It couldn't swallow that much power!

Besides, was one percent of those clouds a small amount?

Not really!

Not at all!

That was the soul power of one hundred thousand men. How much was one percent of one hundred thousand? That was one thousand! Erhuo took the energy from one thousand super powerful cultivators. How could that be a small amount?

Ye Xiao made sure he didn't feel dizzy anymore. That was relieving. This time, he started to get down fast again. About three thousand meters deeper down the precipice, he finally saw the ground in the bottom of the precipice.

He counted in the head and was shocked. [Holy heavens. This is more than twenty thousand meters high! Sky Soul Mountain doesn't seem to be so high. This Sky Soul Precipice was the highest cliff I have ever seen. It must be the highest in the realm...]

He pushed the cliff with his two hands and jumped off the it like a feather. Before he stood on the floor, he made two rounds in the air... Finally, he balanced himself.

Suddenly, he heard a cracking sound beneath his feet. Something happened.

He was frightened and hurriedly lifted one foot while keeping his balance. He looked down and found a skull crack under his foot.

"Holy fxck..."

He jumped aside and then heard another cracking sound...

He was confused. As he looked around down the floor, he was terrified.

Under the cliff, there was a huge piece of flat land. It looked like just a few meters wide when he was falling down, but it turned out to be about one thousand meters wide.

That entire land was covered by human bones!

There were bones everywhere in his sight.

He couldn't tell how many.

He knew what it was now, but still, he was surprised when he felt the skull under his feet. He made a palm strike to the floor and countless of bones flew up. Three meters below, the black earth was revealed.

Apparently, it was soaked in blood for a long time.

He looked around and all he could see was the same thing. He took a cold breath and said, "How... How many people died here? There are absolutely more than one hundred thousand... perhaps even more than one million... One million dead bodies are far from enough to cover the entire floor three meters thick..."

It was reasonable to feel confused. Most of the dead bodies were rotted in this place. When he made the palm strike, some bones turned into ashes before they flew up.

A small part of the bones were still firm. In fact, it was in a bright color like white jade. When it was hit, it made a clear sound.

There was a femur right beside Ye Xiao's feet that was bright like a white jade. Ye Xiao grabbed it in the hand and knocked it. It sounded like metal.

He was confused. He started to pinch it, and it was absolutely still. When he pinched it with half of his full power, the bone finally cracked. However, there was only a small fissure on the bone.

Ye Xiao was only level four of Dream Origin Stage, but half of his power was already strong enough to knead a thick piece of steel.

The bone was actually harder than a piece of steel!

...

Chapter 915: My Soul Power, Your Strength!

That was a bone of a person who might have been dead tens of thousand years!

Ye Xiao thought of it and only felt frightened.

However, frightened as he was, he had to do what he should next. He piled the bones together, separating the hard ones from the rotten. After the time of a meal, he had cleared out an empty place under his feet.

"You were all heroic figures in your lives. It is just wrong and sad to let you be exposed to the wilderness. I happen to be here today and maybe I can do a little help on that. Rest in peace, masters."

He murmured and then hit the floor with one hand in full power. That immediately created a huge pit. He then moved all those normal bones into the pit.

He put those bright and hard stones away and decided to deal with them later.

"Whoever these bones belong to, they must be some real world-shocking figure in their time." Ye Xiao murmured, "You wouldn't want to stay with the ordinary, right? Let me just bury you guys together, enemies or friends... just get along with each other... You can fight or you can drink, at least you won't feel lonely..."

As he collected and moved the bones, he tried to find Fierce Blade Li Wuliang's body.

It was only two years after Li Wuliang fell off the cliff. He wasn't one of the most powerful figures in the history, but he was in the top level of Dao Origin Stage after all. His body shouldn't rot so fast. Ye Xiao carefully checked every dead body that he moved...

He was looking for Li Wuliang's body in such an enormous amount of bones...

"Brother, I am here."

...

He made huge grave mounds behind him.

However, he hadn't seen Li Wuliang's body, nor his sword either...

He was a bit frustrated. He had gotten countless soul power this time and it brought him great benefit. However, he didn't get the only thing he wanted right now. That was frustrating!

[Hmmm... Wait... Fierce Sword?]

[That's right! Fierce Sword!]

He thought of it and felt something strange. [That's right! So many people died in this place. There must be some extremely brutal fights in the old days.]

[Those must be really rough fights!]

[Here comes the question... Where are their weapons?]

[Even if their weapons were all broken, there must still be parts of their weapons!]

[Why... I have collected tens of thousands of dead bodies, yet not even one weapon have I found!]

[What is wrong?]

[Did they all fight with empty hands in the old days?]

[Even if they all fought without even one weapon, there must be the sword of Li Wuliang. It is a big flat land indeed, but it isn't a big place for my spiritual mind. How come I can't feel it? Why?]

When he was lost in deep thoughts, something happened on the ninety-nine mounds behind him. Something unbelievable just happened in the silence.

There was a stream of white smoke rising up on every mound. Ninety-nine smokes rose up and then joined as one in the sky joggling up.

Ye Xiao was deep in thoughts, but by the light of instinct, he sensed something wrong behind him. He turned around and found the smoke rising up from the ninety-nine mounds. There was a huge smoke column in the air.

He widely opened his eyes and nearly exclaimed out.

[What the... Am I haunted?]

Not that he was a coward or something, but what he saw was truly too strange, weird and creepy!

The smoke rose up to the sky and then suddenly rushed down to the floor. Then it disappeared.

Smoke flew up to the sky. It was common sense. How come the smoke actually went down to the floor?

What was happening?

However, things were more frightening than that.

Ye Xiao hadn't dealt with all the dead bodies on the floor yet. Wherever there were dead bodies, cracking sounds would echo out. Suddenly, the floor was rising up slowly, as if some giant animal was coming up from beneath the earth...

Ye Xiao was, of course, a brave man, but he was still scared so badly. His face turned pale! Without hesitation, he started to operate his martial art to full power.

After a while... - Boom! -

A huge stone stele showed up from beneath the ground!

'The battle today must be a secret to the future. Whoever buries us will be granted with great fortune.'

The words showed on top of the stele.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What the hell is going on?]

Things were totally out of his imagination here. One after

another, he was surprised again and again down in the precipice. He was nearly scared out of his wits!

The stele showed up and some words appeared on it. What did that mean?

The words seemed to be just a beginning. After that, line after line, more words appeared on the stele. It showed up slowly but in rhythm.

'Three bolts of lightning. Cold sky. Million demons. Brothers and sisters. Sacrifice. Blood in the realm...'

'XX year XX month, without reason, three bolts of lightning connected the sky and earth, making a rift in the heaven. Millions of demons entered the realm...'

'Millions of brothers joined the demonic war against the demon. Demons had incredible weapons, which could kill us just by touching our bodies. Heaven Inverse Art activated the power of the magnetic mountain which removed all weapons from both sides. All weapons were gone.'

Ye Xiao was shocked. He murmured, "Demonic war..."

'Heaven Inverse Art removed all weapons. Ocean Overturning Art blocked all the ways. Thirty thousand brothers bravely embraced death... Their souls became blood chains... Demons died here, in the life and death battle. Nobody got away from this place, win or lose!'

Ye Xiao was absolutely astonished.

It was clearly written on the stele. In order to keep the demons from killing more people out in the world, the cultivators did whatever they could to draw the demons to this Sky Soul Precipice and started the last fight.

The cultivators used a martial art called Heaven Inverse Art to activate the power of the magnetic mountain from beyond the sky to remove all weapons.

After that, people on both sides would have to fight with empty hands. The cultivators operated Ocean Overturning Art to block all the ways out of the precipice too. They had to fight inside the precipice after that.

It wasn't just blocking the way out to stop the demons from escaping. The cultivators couldn't get out themselves either.

Before the fight really started, thirty thousand superior cultivators, who were all super powerful figures, killed themselves so as their soul power could become some restraining power, to keep all living things imprisoned in the precipice.

Nobody could leave alive.

That revealed the cruelty and severity of the war.

'After this, the demons will surely be destroyed. Our brothers will have to die in this precipice too. The soul chain will be loosened after one hundred thousand years. We will become ashes till then. Men should follow their brave hearts. We live or die, but we have nothing to regret. However, it is still a shame to have our bodies exposed in the wild.'

'Our honorable spirits will never die! Whoever of our future generation is destined to come to this place and bury us, will be granted with enormous soul power. It will help him become an undying legend, as our return for favor.'

'Soul power! Promise! Forever!'

'My name is the least important. Millions of brothers stay here with me. I am never alone. My life is devoted to the war against demons. What a wonderful life!'

...

The words disappeared after that.

It was simply written, a clear narrative of the story. Nothing more. Every word seemed to be casual and normal, as if nobody

had treated this thing any serious.

However, it revealed the generousness and braveness of the person who wrote these words!

Millions of heroes fought against the demons and died with the invaders. They sacrificed their lives to protect the realm.

Such heroic figures!

"This is a true story of the real heroes! Undying legend! A hundred years later, the words were still shining with glory and vigor!" Ye Xiao was respectful.

This was the reason why the three factions couldn't collect the soul power.

The will of the dead.

Only the one who buried their bodies could be granted the soul power!

The three factions could never get the soul power. They would even be afflicted by death!

Ye Xiao understood all now.

He didn't stop moving the dead bodies and continued burying them one by one.

When he was doing it, the jade-like bones that had been in this place for tens of thousands of years and never rotten, suddenly all turned into ashes!

Only a stream of cyan qi appeared from each piece of the bones. That was the purest soul power. Every cultivator left only a little of it. The power gathered in the air, and then after a while, rushed into Ye Xiao's head.

Ye Xiao couldn't resist it even if he wanted to. He had to accept it. The purest soul power entered his body and he suddenly felt the universe exploding inside his mind. Everything suddenly fell into pieces in his sight.

The reality became an image full of colorful broken pieces!

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao straightly fell down to the ground with his face up.

The world was spinning in his head. He felt a really bad headache.

...

Chapter 916: Undying Heroes!

He felt like he was an inflating balloon that kept inflating all the time. That was his only feeling right now.

He knew that he was close to the edge, that he couldn't inflate any bigger, but the power that inflated him didn't stop. It was getting stronger and stronger...

His mind was expanding. That made him suffer.

All skills, knowledge, technique, martial arts... whatever he had learned in the two lives, were useless at the moment!

Because it was irresistible. Even though it was reaching the edge of his endurance, the power was improving his mind's flexibility at the same time, so that he wouldn't break down when the power was expanding in him. That enabled him to keep going.

However, even though it kept him in a safe zone, he still had to suffer the pain as if he was getting through eighteen floors of hell.

Ye Xiao's body was twisting. He was rolling around on the ground. He wanted to exclaim to vent the pain out but couldn't. He felt that his entire body was twisted into some weird shape...

He had experienced lots of things in the two lives. He had even died once. He had been through the three months special training which was like a torture in hell. He used to think there was nothing else that was too painful to endure!

However, he was wrong. He knew it now. The death, the torturing training program, and all that he had been through were mostly physical pain. What was happening to him at the moment was on his soul. That power was working on his soul. It tortured his soul to the edge and made his soul become stronger and stronger. That pain was the most difficult to bear in his life!

He was sure the power inside him must be the purest. Such soul power had the most benefit for him.

However, he had to bear all the extreme pain now!

This was a gift from the heroes in the ancient days!

No matter how painful it was, he had to hold on with it!

The bodies of the heroes had vanished. Only those most powerful ones could keep their willpower stay. In fact, each of them only had one tiny bit of their power left in the world.

There were so many of them. All those tiny bits of power joined together made an enormous mass of energy. It wasn't easy to bear.

It was an extremely painful process.

Ye Xiao had never felt such pain ever!

He was so sure that he could last long!

The pain hit him wave after wave like tides. He felt that his mind, his soul, his consciousness... were all growing in the extreme pain.

Maybe it was the pain that activated the improvement of his soul, or maybe it was the improvement of his soul that caused the pain on him. Within one hour, his soul power had become ten times stronger!

The initial pain he thought to be the worst had grown even more. It was at least eight times stronger now...

Ye Xiao was sure... that other cultivators who were even beyond level eight of Dream Origin Stage would fail to bear such pain. They might break down and become crackbrained under such a painful torture!

Even those in low levels of Dao Origin Stage couldn't handle it!

After some time, he finally felt the pain decreasing. He felt better and better about it. He felt more and more comfortable...

"... Oh heavens... My heavens... That..." Ye Xiao lied on the floor. He was exhausted. He couldn't move even a bit. He felt like a mass

of cotton or a pile of flour.

He didn't even have the energy to blink. However, he could feel the strong power of his mind.

He felt that he could cover the entire Qing-Yun Realm with his spiritual mind. That was what he felt right now!

In fact, it was impossible. Not to mention Ye Xiao, even Wu Fa, who was known as the No. 1 cultivator in the realm, couldn't cover over so much with his spiritual mind. However, Ye Xiao did feel the dramatical improvement of his mind power. He was obsessed with this feeling. He was sure his mind power was stronger than his previous life now!

That was right. Even Xiao Monarch, who was in the top level of Dao Origin Stage, couldn't compare to him right now!

Not only the mind power was much stronger now, but also his soul!

He was stronger than the previous life in soul power, and his soul power was purer than before!

Ye Xiao's soul power would still be improved as his cultivation level went up. His soul power would improve no matter if he would cultivate the soul power particularly or not. Every upgrade, his soul power would be stronger. Xiao Monarch's soul power stopped growing because he was already in the top level of Dao Origin Stage in Qing-Yun Realm. There was no room to improve anymore!

He had gained a lot this time. He was surely happy about it. However, he had been lying on the ground for about eight hours because he was too weak to move. When he was able to move a bit, he started to check how much he was benefited in this. He couldn't stop grinning when he did it.

He had gotten a lot.

The first thing he did after he got up was to clean the bone ashes.

It was him being respectful when he first decided to sort out the bones and bury them. He didn't want the heroes to be exposed in the wildness.

However, as he did it again, he was more grateful than just respectful.

He respected them because they sacrificed themselves to fight against the enemies in this place.

That was heroic! That was a great move!

All they wanted was not just the joy of killing the enemies, but the peace for the entire world. They wanted the world to get away from the demons!

That was why they decided to kill themselves.

Before the battle started, they knew they would die there. They knew it was a one-way ticket.

They would sacrifice themselves to make sure none of the demons would go out to murder innocent people!

How could he not respect such heroic figures!

After working for a full day, he finally buried all the bones.

The entire land was full of huge mounds.

When he was taking care of the bones, he carefully used the rocks around the place to make a wall to make a cemetery.

The entree of the cemetery, there was a stone stele standing high.

'In Memory of the Undying Heroes!'

'Set by a humble young man, Ye Xiao, with respect to their glory.'

...

Chapter 917: Where Is Li Wuliang?

Ye Xiao stood in front of the stele, humble and solemn. He bowed and stayed low for a long time.

...

After all was done, he started to think about the one question he cared from the beginning... Where was Li Wuliang?

Where was Li Wulaing?

And his Fierce Sword?

Where was it?

The heroes who died in this place had no weapons because they did it on purpose. The magnetic mountain took all the weapons away before the demonic war began. It was reasonable that none of them left any weapon in this place. However, Li Wuliang fell down to this place only two years earlier. His body might be rotten, but the sword must be somewhere in this place!

How come Ye Xiao still didn't find it?

He was quite confident that he could recognize Li Wuliang's body from the other bodies. However, other than the weapon, he didn't find the body either. Besides, when the willpower of the dead cultivators came out, all bones turned into ashes. There should be no other full bodies anymore.

There came another question.

Li Wuliang didn't make such a strong wish with such a powerful willpower. He died only two years earlier. Powerful as he was, his body shouldn't have rotten so fast...

Ye Xiao searched the entire place again but still found nothing.

Nothing!

Nothing at all!

He looked around and all he could see was the dense fog around him. He couldn't see any further, even with his Yin Yang Eyes on.

He frowned.

"Why? According to the landscape of this place, when Brother Li was hit and fell off the cliff... he shouldn't have hit anything when he fell down. He should have fallen straight down to the ground here!"

"It is at least twenty thousand meters from the top of the mountain... He was badly injured when he fell off. In fact, even if he was in prime condition, he would still die for sure after falling straight down and hitting the ground..."

"But... He just disappeared... There is no clue of him at all... What happened?"

He frowned in confusion.

While he was lost in thought, he casually walked to a place on the edge of this land. He got to a corner where there were lots of plants growing in it, like all plants in this place were gathered together.

Ye Xiao looked at the bush in front of him. He didn't notice anything at the beginning, but as he looked at it, he found something wrong.

"This is strange... The war in the old days was so dramatic. The entire land should be affected... How come there are no even grasses in other places, yet there are so many plants growing in this corner? This must be a special place!"

He frowned and stared at a bush. After a while, he made a palm strike. The energy of the strike unrooted the grasses and bush.

"Oh?"

He was shocked.

What came after that palm strike had truly shocked him!

After the plants were removed, there was a fissure on the cliff.

The top of the fissure was only as wide as half a hand. The bottom of the fissure was almost two meters wide! He looked into the fissure and couldn't see the end.

However, he saw a hole. It was dark inside and he couldn't see anything in it.

"The war happened at least a hundred thousand years ago. Nobody in Qing-Yun Realm knows about it. Even the three factions didn't know it..."

"In the hundred thousand years, the power chain in this mountain eventually disappeared as time passed by. It became an ordinary mountain. Is this fissure an outcome of the earth's movement

"Maybe because of it, the fissure was produced, and the power chain was destroyed. Day by day, the power of nature shaped this mountain into an ordinary mountain..."

"No matter what, this fissure must be important. It must have appeared many years after the war ended... The super powerful cultivators wouldn't have left such a leak."

"What's inside this fissure? Where does it lead to?"

Ye Xiao searched around trying to find Li Wuliang's body, but he got nothing. With a long sigh, he moved to the hole without any hesitation.

Erhuo was naturally running before him.

When he was about to enter the hole, he suddenly thought of something. He reached out one hand and made a pulling power. A huge pile of mud moved over to him fast.

When he entered the cave, the entrance of the cave was blocked by the mud.

The hole couldn't be seen from the outside anymore.

Erhuo was leading the road, and Ye Xiao was following. A man

and a cat, they were both walking in the cave quietly.

Ye Xiao's Yin Yang Eyes wasn't at a high level, so he still couldn't see clearly in the dark cave. However, he could still see some of the things around him. It was much better than being blind.

As they moved forward, the cave was getting more and more spacious. However, he felt something cold in the cave. He was quite familiar with the coldness now after experiencing it for so many times. Sometimes, he would hit something in the cave. It turned out to be stalactite that was formed after hundreds of thousands of years.

These were not important though. The most important thing...

He couldn't see clearly, but he still had sharp feelings by touch. He could feel some stalactite was broken. There were some broken parts of the stalactite on the floor. He had found many of them already.

It was normal that the stalactite would break and fall down to the ground, however, as he touched the fracture, he found it was new. If one or two fractures were new, it was still reasonable. However, there were many stalactites with a new fracture. In fact, all the fractures he found were new. That only pointed out one possibility...

"Did somebody enter this room before me?"

"These fractures... The stalactites are broken not very long ago..."

He was suddenly enlightened. "This... Wait... Is Li Wuliang alive? Did he make this? It must be... He is alive!"

Thinking about that, he urged Erhuo, "Erhuo! Move faster! Quick!"

...

Chapter 918: You Are Alive, Brother!

Erhuo meowed and twisted its mouth in disdain.

[The darkness and the space shape cannot slow me at all. I just want you to be able to catch up with me, you dumb*ss! How shameless are you to urge me?]

They had walked for a long time in the dark, till they finally saw a bit of light.

It was just a bit of light, but it was like the flush of dawn sweeping away the darkness!

Ye Xiao was spirited. He moved even faster to the light.

- Boom! -

He carelessly hit a clod over his head. He moved so fast that he kept rushing forward after hitting that clod.

Suddenly, sun shined upon him, and at the same time, there was coldness.

The coldness meant nothing to him really. However, the sun burned his eyes a little. He closed his eyes for a while until he made sure that his eyes had gotten used to the brightness. He opened his eyes slowly.

And then he was shocked by what he saw.

That...

The coldness was from everywhere. He was surrounded by a world of snow. He had reached a valley full of snow and ice. No roads or anything else except ice and snow. Mountains were so tall, reaching the clouds. Such a weird place.

The mountains were so hard and slippery. No weapons could cause any damage on the mountains before him, and nobody could climb it.

There was another hole at the foot of one of the mountains. It was almost covered by the snow. However, it seemed somebody, or perhaps something frequently got in and out the hole.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Hello? Anybody?"

As he spoke, his voice echoed from everywhere.

"Anybody?"

"... body..."

"..."

It kept resounding in the valley.

Before the echo stopped, another voice deeply sounded, "Such a sh*t hole... yet there is another person here now? Should I say lucky or unlucky?" This man seemed to be talking to himself. It was echoing too.

The echoing voice made the place feel like a dreamland. Everything seemed so fake.

When Ye Xiao heard the voice, his blood started to boil up. His face turned red and tears nearly shed out of his eyes because of extreme happiness. He shouted loudly, "Li Wuliang! You f*cking bastard! You god damn prick! You are actually alive! How come you are still alive! You asshole! You actually survived!"

"God damn!" Ye Xiao laughed out loud and shouted loud.

He was indescribably surprised and delighted!

It was not just echoing this time. It was strongly reverberating! He inadvertently spoke with his loudest voice. It was so loud that the echo was so loud too. The sound came back to him from everywhere like moving mountains. It nearly caused a snow slide which was powerful enough to bury the entire mountain.

A man showed up from inside the cave. He was tall and had a muscular body, with a full beard on his face. He was just like a huge mountain standing there, looking at Ye Xiao in the eyes.

"You... Who are you? How... How do you recognize me? Why are you calling me a bastard? Why would you talk to me like that... You..."

Apparently, he wasn't pissed by Ye Xiao's impolite words. Instead, he felt so familiar with the way Ye Xiao talked. It sounded like Xiao Monarch, but the two looked totally different. Li Wuliang was confused and nearly speechless!

"Who am I? I am your master! I am your bloody master, you prick!" Ye Xiao laughed out loud and rushed over to Li Wuliang. He raised up a fist and made a strike. When the fist was moving in the air, he turned it into a palm. His five fingers hit the air and suddenly made thousands of breezes at the same time.

The air in front of his palm started to shake and then appeared as a word.

'Xiao'!

Ye Xiao didn't stop his hand. It kept waving in the air stirring up strong wind. The wind kept hitting the word 'Xiao', which was made with spiritual qi. The word started to spin and move towards Li Wuliang.

The word kept spinning in the air like a man laughing wildly.

"You don't recognize me, but you have to recognize this word! Don't you dare to not recognize it! I will torture you for seven whole days!" Ye Xiao laughed loudly. He looked so happy and spirited.

Fierce Blade Li Wuliang was shocked as if he was hit by a lightning. After a while, he spoke with his shaking lips, "You... You are... Ye Xiao?"

Ye Xiao jumped over to him and held him in the arms while laughing loudly, "You god damn bastard! You are alive! You are actually alive!"

Li Wuliang was shocked and confused. At the same time, he was

also happy and surprised. He stared at Ye Xiao and said, "You... what happened to your face? You died and revived in another's body? Walk-in?" [1]

Li Wuliang knew Ye Xiao so well. He recognized him just through his palm strike, the way he talked, and his facial expressions... He was sure it was his best friend, his brother, Xiao Monarch!

Even though he was now in a totally different body, he was Ye Xiao!

However, he was curious about what happened to Ye Xiao.

It was reasonable that he made such a guess, considering their cultivation levels. Gu Jinlong was just level three of Dao Origin stage and he could operate a Walk-in. Ye Xiao had reached the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage back in the old days!

"Long story." Ye Xiao shook his head and smiled. "Let me see your doghouse now. I would love to see what it looks like. Hahahaha..."

Li Wuliang felt like he was dreaming. Ye Xiao pushed him back into the cave. Li Wuliang was blank as if he was still having a daydream.

Fierce Blade, who used to be world-shocking in the old days, was now wearing ragged clothes that barely covered his body. His upper body was naked, showing his copper-skin chest which was full of bruises and scars.

His beard and hair were disheveled. It must have been a long time since he last took care of them. A few pieces of cloth were tied on his waist, covering his private part. Some feathers too. Maybe he used them as decoration, or just to cover the bigger part of his body.

However, his body was still strong as always.

The day when Ye Xiao met Guan Lingxiao, he felt so familiar to the big guy, because he had the same size body with Li Wuliang. In fact, when he saw Li Wuliang again, he realized how big the

difference was between them.

Guan Lingxiao was tall and big, like a mountain that people could only look up to.

However, Li Wuliang gave people an even more enormous image, beyond just mountains. He stood there and already made people feel like facing a great mountain range!

He was naturally overwhelming.

He just stood there and his two shoulders looked so strong as if they could carry the sky.

He was just like that!

Even though he was barely wearing anything, with disheveled hair, he was still domineering and vigorous!

...

[1] A walk-in is a new-age concept of a person whose original soul has departed his or her body and has been replaced with a new soul, either temporarily or permanently.

Chapter 919: Weird Ganoderma

Ye Xiao immediately entered the cave and found it nearly empty. It was just a shelter. The only special thing was the feathers of all different kinds of birds...

The entire cave was about two meters wide. It was pretty narrow.

"You have been living in this place for two years?" Ye Xiao felt sad about it, but then he laughed, "What a miserable life."

"It is good to have a roof here at least!" Li Wulaing laughed. "I was totally broken. I was truly lucky to survive..."

As they talked, Ye Xiao got to know everything after Li Wuliang fell off the cliff.

When he fell off the cliff, he passed out. The last thought in his head was death.

He didn't want to give up, but he knew it was fatal to fall off this cliff even when he was in prime condition, let alone he was nearly dead. How could he still believe he would survive?

However, when he got to the red and white clouds, he actually stopped right in the clouds. He didn't go on falling.

The red and white clouds created some strange energy which recovered Li Wuliang's body a bit. When he woke up, some of the wounds on his body were healed. When he was back to himself, he immediately felt the pain too. His soul was pulled by a strong power.

At the same time, because Li Wuliang was awake, the red and white clouds couldn't hold him anymore, which he had no idea why. He then fell from the clouds...

That was killing him but at the same time saving him. He was never able to get rid of the power of the red and white clouds by himself. If he stayed in it longer, his soul might be ruined.

However, even though he fell off the clouds and kept his soul safe, that caused some new wounds on him. Luckily, when he was in the clouds, some wounds were healed. Otherwise, he should have died when he fell down to the ground.

Sometimes the will of nature was unpredictable.

Li Wuliang was truly a lucky guy to have all this happen to him after he fell off the cliff. The red and white clouds were thousands of meters high from the ground. Li Wuliang should have been killed while falling down to the ground from the height.

However, he fell on a pile of rotten bones. That was such a great suffering. In the end, when he was about to hit the ground, he only used a tiny bit of his energy to protect himself up a bit.

That was the only thing he could do.

He felt much worse after hitting the ground, but he survived. If there was a hard bone beneath the pile of rotten ones, Li Wuliang must have been a dead body now. Ye Xiao might only find a dead body of his brother which was stabbed through by a jade-like bone!

Li Wuliang was seriously hurt. Maybe he was blessed. The first thing he saw when he woke up again was a blood ganoderma on the pile of bones. It was totally red and had a beautiful scent.

Li Wuliang didn't hesitate. He used up the last bit of energy to grab the ganoderma and swallowed it directly.

The ganoderma must be something rather valuable. It didn't recover him instantly, but it kept him safe. He could at least stand up and move after that.

He was alive, but he was afraid to be hunted again. He didn't have any power to defend himself anymore. He kept looking around and found this fissure. When he crawled over the fissure, he reached the valley.

It was cold there, but it was covert. He thought maybe he could try to recover himself by cultivating in this place.

That was why he stayed in this place for such a long time.

"How did you stay so calm in this place? Your capability... Even though you were seriously injured, you should be recovered now..." Ye Xiao was confused.

Li Wuliang humped. He said, "Since I fell off that cliff, there have been many strange things that happened to me. First of all, I survived. I was nearly unconscious and couldn't feel anything. At that time, however, I remember that something warm and soft covered me tight. When I woke up, I was going to hit the ground.

"I hurriedly held my breath to protect myself up a bit. That kept me alive. I am sure the bones didn't hold me up. Bones are not strong enough to hold me. When we saw the red and white clouds in the old days, we have been falling for ten thousand meters. The bones were firm, but the pile of bones could never be strong enough to hold me.

"The clouds... I still have no idea how I got past them. That was some overwhelming power that kept pulling my soul out. When I woke up, I was seriously wounded outside, but my soul was unharmed. My soul is fine. My soul power is recovered. If not for that god damn ganoderma, I should have recovered after three, no longer than five months after that..."

"Ganoderma? What is wrong with that ganoderma?" Ye Xiao was curious.

When Ye Xiao heard the part about eating the ganoderma, he felt that the ganoderma must be something extremely valuable!

That was certain.

There were lots of stories, most of which were made up, about some heroes being forced by the enemies to jump off the murderous precipice, but at the end survived down the bottom of the precipice. Besides, they usually met something real valuable and rare in the world, which could improve their power greatly.

They ate the valuable materials and became invincible. In the end, they jumped up to the mountain, returned to the world, took revenge, and began a happy life with a gorgeous beauty...

Well, it didn't seem to be quite the same on Li Wuliang...

"That ganoderma... It was good. It was full of energy. However, there was also something extremely weird in it... I felt like it was an illusion but it turned out to be so real." Li Wuliang looked sad. "That ganoderma saved my life, indeed. However, it brought me endless bad luck afterwards. I have been living in hell..."

"One day, the wounds were nearly healed. I actually felt my cultivation was coming back to me. I was so happy. You know how it feels. The next day, suddenly a mass of weird qi rose up inside me and tore my wounds apart... That was as painful as being cut into pieces..."

"Oh... That means... There were two types of energies. One could heal your body, while the other... would break your body..."

Ye Xiao grinned. "How lucky you are... This must be something really unique in the history... and it happened on you... Oh my..."

Suddenly, he was gloating that he was not the one who had eaten that ganoderma...

...

[1] Ganoderma is a genus of polypore mushrooms that grow on wood, and includes about 80 species, many from tropical regions.

Chapter 920: The Best Bad Friend

Li Wulaing felt like crying. "Tell me about it. Do you know what else I can't believe? The energy in that blood ganoderma is incredibly enormous. It is all hidden inside my body now. I didn't know how powerful a ganoderma could be. I thought it would be a blessing if that ganoderma could make me feel better.

"However, every time when I started to cultivate and recover myself, there will be a stream of warm power coming to help. That boosted me up, and the wounds were healed fast. However, before I could have time to be happy, another stream of energy will start to hurt the wounds with have just been healed on me. Long story short, the two types of energies were torturing me like hell. Do you understand this?"

"Urh..." Ye Xiao kept his eyes opened. He was surprised. [Is this even real?]

However, he got to understand it after thinking for a while, comparing to his own experience. There were lots of powerful heroes who had left their soul power in this place. In fact, people on the demon's side must have left more!

"It's fine if it just hurt me and help me at the same time. No matter how powerful the ganoderma is, the energy will eventually be drained. What I need to do is to hold on with it till that day comes. The two will eventually be gone. However, there is something torturing me more. Whenever I started to cultivate, as I activate my martial art, there will be a sound echoing in my head... 'It's wrong... You are doing it in a wrong way' ..."

"I have been cultivating it all my life. I am already level nine of Dao Origin Stage now... How could I be wrong about it?" Li Wuliang was a bit angry about it. "It is totally bullsh*t! But... That voice keep resounding in my head. It keeps troubling me... How do I cultivate with that in my head..."

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was speechless.

"After I started to hear that voice, I realized the sound comes from the power that got on me earlier. It was messing with my head. It keeps giving me a hint into my soul... It's like a hypnosis... It makes me feel that everything I have been doing on cultivation is wrong... I know it is lying, but when a lie repeats hundreds of times... You just couldn't stop being affected by it... Sometimes, I would suddenly wake up feeling that I should believe it, and then I would feel scared..."

"I have been staying here for a long time and I barely cultivated... I am only about level six of Dream Origin Stage at the moment..." Li Wuliang looked at his own hands and said, "I noticed something even more tragic recently. The two types of power from the ganoderma have been a part of myself. Sometimes, my body will be cured, but sometimes, that power with that voice will run around in my body... It stops me from cultivating myself. What the hell is going on with my damn life..."

He made a long sigh.

Ye Xiao made a long sigh too. "That's sad. What the hell is going on with your life..."

"What do you eat staying in this place? It is covered by snow and ice. Where do you find food?" Ye Xiao asked Li Wuliang.

Li Wuliang hunched and pointed at the feathers. "There used to be a pair of snow vultures. I came here and killed them and ate them too. Sometimes, some other birds will get down here. I catch them all and save them for food..."

"Sometimes, I can catch four birds in a day and have a feast on my own. Sometimes, I catch nothing within two months... I had to starve for two months..."

Li Wuliang looked upset. "What kind of life am I living here..."

Ye Xiao said, "What kind of life? Look at you. Living a miserable

life, yet you are still big and fat like this. Unbelievable."

Li Wuliang was furious. "Can't you have at least a bit conscience? How can you tell I am big and fat?"

Ye Xiao laughed and stopped teasing him.

"Alright now. Stop talking about me." Li Wuliang looked at Ye Xiao. "Let's talk about you. Why do you look like this? You should be an old monster. How could you actually get yourself such a young man's body? What? You want to be a gigolo or something? So that life could be easier for you?"

"Screw you! It is all because of you, bastard! How else would I end up in this f*cking situation?" Ye Xiao raged up. "Can't you have the least bit of conscience? By the way! I am a handsome and strapping young man! Not a f*cking gigolo!"

"Because of me? You went to take revenge for me?" Li Wulaing jumped up. He was so surprised that his eyes were big like two bells. Then he smiled bitterly and said, "You know me, and I know you. I guess you would definitely go revenge for me..."

"What surprised me is... You were actually defeated and killed..." Li Wuliang clicked with his tongue and looked at Ye Xiao. "The well-known world-shocking and heroic Xiao Monarch... turns out to be just so-so. Look at you... Of course, you are handsome. Much better than your old look... Oh my... Dream Origin Stage... Aha... How fast. You are almost a superior cultivator now."

Ye Xiao replied in a weird tone, "My face is changed. So what? Xiao Monarch was defeated and killed, but I damaged the three factions badly! I killed more than stupid Fierce Blade, didn't I? All in all, Xiao Monarch is stronger, much stronger, than Fierce Blade. Besides, I lived a few months longer than you in the martial world. I am still stronger than you even just living one minute longer than you! Isn't it true? Fierce Blade got beaten up like sh*t in a short time. A level nine Dao Origin Stage super cultivator got beaten up and kicked off the cliff... Oh my... Level six of Dream Origin Stage?"

That's so strong! I started to feel scared now..."

That was what they did. The first day when they met each other again, they started to satirize each other.

After teasing each other for a while, they looked at each other and then started to laugh out loud.

It had been so long since they last talked to each other like this!

It had been so long since they talked to each other face to face!

After both of them had been through death, they sat together and talked, laughed, and teased each other.

They were happy to meet each other again. They were enjoying the time to sit face to face.

It was difficult to describe the feelings they had in the hearts. [Only he could talk to me like this.]

[There is only one person in the world!]

[And it is enough!]

[Now we are staying with each other again!]

[Nothing else is important at the moment!]

In the previous life, Ye Xiao had fought against Li Wuliang many times. Every time, Ye Xiao seemed to be leading, but Li Wuliang would always still have a chance to win.

However, when they were having a quarrel, they were evenly powerful! Sometimes, Li Wuliang was even better than Ye Xiao. [I can't defeat you in a fight, but I can win this quarrel...]

"By the way... You did a walk-in... then I guess you are not cultivating the pure yang martial art now?" Li Wuliang spoke seriously, "I told you, it is powerful indeed, but it is... inhuman. That is savage!"

Ye Xiao was awkward.

[God damn it. He truly is a best bad friend of mine. He will rub it

in without hesitation.]

Well, Li Wuliang was right. It was inhuman and savage!

"Of course not!" Ye Xiao glared.

"Good! Otherwise, it will be a waste of such a gorgeous beauty. I am talking about her, not you." Li Wuliang laughed.

...

Chapter 921: This Is Life!

Ye Xiao was going to slap on Li Wuliang's face.

[Of course she is a gorgeous beauty, I am too! Who dares to question me!]

"Alright. Let's be serious." Li Wuliang raised up both of his hands and gave in. "I don't mind that you become like this. We are brothers after all. I have no problem to accept you. But... what are you going to tell her? Do you think she will accept you? Do you think you know how to speak to her?"

Ye Xiao was upset about it. "I am worrying about it. This is the biggest problem in my head. I know I have to face it someday, but..."

Li Wuliang frowned. "This is tough. You know, it is nearly impossible to understand women. If she thinks something is right, it's right. Nothing changes her mind. You just have to accept it. However, we don't know if she will deny you."

"After all, you are still the same Ye Xiao. You just have a different body." Li Wuliang felt a headache for him. "I guess only you can figure out how to make things right."

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Let's just wait and see what will happen next."

He didn't want to think about it because it was such a headache. He changed the topic immediately. "Where is your Fierce Sword?"

"It's here." Li Wuliang reached his hand into some feathers and took out his beloved weapon. He touched the sword on his face and said, "Where is your Monarch's Sword?"

Ye Xiao sighed. "Lost."

He recollected the scene when he was fighting against the three factions... The sword... when he was fighting seven Dao Origin

Stage cultivators at the same time, his sword flew out and vanished. He had no idea who got his sword at the end.

"Lost? It is actually..." LI Wuliang was surprised. He then understood what happened. He said, "Brother, thanks."

He knew how Ye Xiao fought and risked his life to avenge him!

That fight actually made the honorable Xiao Monarch lose his Monarch's Sword!

That must be a terribly drastic fight!

Of course it was. Ye Xiao died at the end of the fight, didn't he? He sacrificed himself in an attempt to avenge his sworn brother!

"Come on, man. Don't show me your tears. I can't endure that scene. There is no need to have that in mind. We are brothers." Ye Xiao blandly said, "Now we should focus on recovering your cultivation. Let me check what is going on with the two types of power."

Li Wuliang smiled bitterly and said, "Of course it is not the most important thing now. It is... go get me some cloths you asshole! You don't want me to be naked all the time! Don't tell me you have started to like naked guys now... Go get me some food too! Liquor? I haven't tasted any for two years... I have been living like an animal..."

Ye Xiao laughed.

There were lots of things in the Boundless Space. That was lucky. There were clothes, food, liquor and many other things. He took them all out and asked, "Wait, where is your space ring? You are too miserable now, you know?"

If Li Wuliang had his space ring, he shouldn't have been living so miserably for two years.

"What kind of idiot would put clothes and food in the space ring? How did I know I would be stuck in this place for two years..." Li

Wuliang rolled up his eyes. He put on some clothes and swallowed the food. He drank the liquor and talked to Ye Xiao at the same time. He did it so fast. That was impressive though.

"Besides... My space ring was broken in that fight." Li Wuliang humped and said, "My body was nearly broken, so how could I have the time to watch my ring..."

"This tastes good! Good drink!" Li Wuliang chewed and said, "I'll be damned. I never knew that flatbread could be so tasty. It is cold and hard, but tastes good..."

He was like a piggish eater. Ye Xiao teased him, "Even a cold and hard flatbread becomes tasty in your mouth. I see. Several more years later, you will even enjoy eating shit. Fresh and soft shit..."

"Piss off!" Li Wuliang shouted.

"Everything you are eating, drinking, and wearing is all mine. And you actually told me to piss off? Not a word of gratitude? Really?" Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes and said, "You must want to get beaten-up real hard, huh?"

...

Finally, Li Wuliang had eaten and drunk enough. He threw out everything in the cave and then took off every thing on his body. He actually ran out the cave naked... He stayed outside the cave and grabbed the snow on the ground to wash his body. After cleaning his body, he started to use his Fierce Sword to shave his beard and hair. After all was done, he returned to the cave and put on the clothes Ye Xiao prepared for him. He murmured about how the clothes didn't fit him, and complained that Ye Xiao wasn't a real man anymore!

Ye Xiao shouted in fury, "Screw you! My clothes, of course, are in small size! Look at your big fat body! Why don't you take it off now! Just go naked!"

Li Wuliang stayed quiet. He then lied down on the bed Ye Xiao

made for him and stretched his legs. Lying on the bed, he greedily breathed in the smell of sunshine on the quilt. He said, "It's been so long... This feels like real life now..."

[Life?]

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes, "What do you know about life? Tell me about the weird power in you now! I don't have all day to talk about your stupid life!"

"What more do you want to know about that stupid power? Please stop bothering me! I want to sleep!" Li Wuliang humped, "You want to know it, then why don't you check it by yourself? You will get to know what a miserable life I have been living in these two years!"

"As you wish then. I will not ask again. You ate my food, drank my liquor, wore my clothes, and slept on my quilt! I don't think why I should hesitate." Ye Xiao grabbed his arm and used a stream of pure spiritual energy. The energy rushed into the arm quickly.

Li Wuliang wasn't surprised at all. He yawned and closed his eyes. He was fast deeply asleep. It must be tight and sweet.

If there was anybody in front his whom Li Wuliang could absolutely relax with, it would only be Ye Xiao!

As Li Wuliang said, the person who would definitely avenge him was Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was the only one who would possibly find him in this place!

The truth proved him right. Ye Xiao didn't fail him.

It had been two years. Li Wuliang hadn't slept well for two years. No matter how sleepy he was, he just closed his eyes and rested for a while before Ye Xiao came. He hadn't slept on a quilt during the two years.

Now he finally did.

He felt safe. He couldn't resist the sleepiness anymore!

Besides, his best brother was right beside him. Li Wuliang could finally relax his vigilance after suffering for two years.

He fell asleep almost within a few seconds.

...

Chapter 922: Ghost Ganoderma!

When Li Wuliang closed his eyes and deeply fell asleep, he missed the image of Ye Xiao's continuously changing facial expression. Ye Xiao stopped nagging!

When he operated the East-rising Purple Qi to enter Li Wuliang's Jing and Mai, there was a strong resistance!

Since he started cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi in the second life, it had always been marvelous. It was always more useful than he could imagine. Even when he met that red and white clouds, which was mysterious and powerful, East-rising Purple Qi could still work so well.

Ye Xiao never doubted that the East-rising Purple Qi was the best martial art in the universe. It was the best!

However, what just happened made him feel doubtful!

The energy inside Li Wuliang was an absolute dark power. It was full of viciousness and atrocity! When Ye Xiao poured the purple qi into Li Wuliang's body, the dark power was making attempts to get back on Ye Xiao. It was tracing the purple qi to invade Ye Xiao's body!

East-rising Purple Qi was indeed a marvelous martial art. It stopped the dark power before it could even enter. If not, Ye Xiao might have already been invaded!

That was such a strong power. Even Ye Xiao felt the strength of it, as if the power was inexhaustible.

At that moment, he wanted to draw back the spiritual qi to keep himself safe. However, he stopped such a thought with his strong willpower. He couldn't retreat. Once he retreated, he would never be able to defeat the dark power. Deep in his heart, he would fail to help his best friend. He couldn't retreat!

He kept staying inside, driven by his strong willpower and the

significant purple qi. But the dark power was too strong.

That dark power wasn't Li Wuliang's cultivation power. It came from outside Li Wuliang and stayed inside his body. It was so strong that Ye Xiao couldn't imagine how powerful it was.

East-rising Purple Qi was surely powerful enough to defeat that dark power. It was much stronger than the dark power. However, Ye Xiao was weak. He himself limited the strength of East-rising Purple Qi. That was why the energy flow from the East-rising Purple Qi was like a cup of water trying to put off a big fire! It didn't help!

When Ye Xiao was frustrated and preparing to retreat his spiritual power, he found that except for the unbelievably powerful dark power, there was also the other type of power inside Li Wuliang's body, which was strong and bright. The bright power was also overwhelming. It was actually fighting the dark power inside his brother's body.

The two types of power were equal.

Sometimes, the dark power was winning, but then the bright power would catch up.

Sometimes, the bright power was ascendant, expelling the darkness, but then the dark power would come close.

Neither side won. One attacked while the other defended. That was all.

Most of the time, the two types of power were intertwining. The brightness and the darkness fought and supported each other at the same time!

The power from the East-rising Purple Qi in Li Wuliang's body was too weak! It was nothing!

The only thing Ye Xiao could do with the power flow was to feel the other two enormous powers. When Ye Xiao clearly felt the two enormous powers, he realized how difficult it was for Li Wuliang

to talk and laugh casually at the moment.

He couldn't imagine how this tough man kept himself balanced between the two totally different types of power. He wondered what Li Wuliang did to make the two powers get along with each other so well... to keep the direct conflict from happening inside him...

Two extremely powerful powers stayed inside Li Wuliang's body at the same time.

One was fixing him, while the other was destroying him.

Ye Xiao was shocked at how Li Wuliang recovered himself from a fatal damage to level six of Dream Origin Stage under such a dangerous circumstance! It was a great miracle!

[Holy heavens! What is that ghost-like ganoderma?] Ye Xiao was sacred. [Two opposing powers in one ganoderma? I have cleaned all the dead bodies in that place. How come I didn't see any blood ganoderma?]

[His problem is... we shouldn't touch either of the two powers. We can't help either side to destroy the other. If the balance is broken, he may die instantly because of the explosion of the power that stays!]

[However, I am afraid the balance will not last long if we just let the two powers stay inside him. Someday, something will happen on the two types of powers and Li Wuliang will explode into flesh and blood.]

Ye Xiao was totally helpless at the moment. [Damn it! Why would this happen?]

He couldn't think of anything!

"Erhuo, come here! What should we do about it? Do you have any ideas?" Ye Xiao frowned and called Erhuo.

Erhuo was a mysterious creature. It should know more than Ye

Xiao about such a high-level situation. It was Ye Xiao's last hope now, so surely he wouldn't let Erhuo be free!

Erhuo stood up inside the Space and meowed lazily.

Apparently, Erhuo had been exhausted and didn't recover from it yet.

Ye Xiao called it, so it had to go. Erhuo unwillingly walked out and arrogantly reached out its paw and put it on Ye Xiao's hand. Erhuo's power went through Ye Xiao's hand and got into Li Wuliang's Jing and Mai.

"Meow?" Erhuo suddenly changed its face. It meowed in an unbelieving voice. Its eyes were widely opened.

"Meow, meow, meeeeow, meoooooww?" Erhuo was waving its tail fast, and it looked like just a shadow.

Even in such a serious situation, Ye Xiao wanted to laugh as he looked at the cat's silly look.

While Erhuo was deep in thoughts, it would wave its tail like that. The more concentrated it was while thinking, the faster it waved the tail. It didn't even notice it. Ye Xiao had seen it many times, yet every time he would be amused...

Looking at the white shadow of Erhuo's tail, he knew Erhuo was troubled.

"Meooooow..." Erhuo shouted unbelievably.

Ye Xiao stopped smiling.

He knew what Erhuo's shout meant. Erhuo wasn't shouting about anything complicated.

That shout meant only two words. 'Ghost Ganoderma'!

Ye Xiao actually had said 'ghost-like ganoderma' earlier in the head.

"What the hell? What is Ghost Ganoderma?"

Just when he asked about it, Erhuo told him, "This ganoderma is named Ghost Ganoderma."

What a coincidence!

...

Chapter 923: What A Good Luck

"Millions of souls. Brightness and darkness. Endless grudge. Blood, flesh, and souls. An isolated place... All these, under the effect of the power of contradiction, made the contradictory Ghost Ganoderma!"

Erhuo spent a long time to explain it to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao finally understood it.

"How do we remove such power then?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Remove?" Erhuo looked at Ye Xiao with big round eyes, like looking at a fool, a complete idiot. It didn't understand why Ye Xiao would want to do that. "That is a great blessing! Such a good luck! Why do you want to remove it?"

"Great blessing? Good luck?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

After a while, he turned around and looked at Li Wuliang's body.

Ye Xiao thought that Li Wuliang should be sleeping tight. After all, Li Wuliang had his best friend staying with him, and he hadn't slept well for a long time. After he fell asleep earlier, Ye Xiao thought that he might sleep for several days!

However... Li Wuliang was awake. In fact, he woke up for a long time now. He just closed his eyes pretending to be asleep so that Ye Xiao wouldn't worry. However, he slightly frowned and trembled from time to time and that exposed him. Ye Xiao could clearly feel how much Li Wuliang was suffering. His body was in great pain. Even though he was such a tough man, he couldn't endure it...

The dark power was hurting him. The wounds that were cured started to rupture because of the dark power. It revealed his muscles... He was shaking...

Li Wuliang kept his eyes closed and mouth shut. However, nobody could sleep in such pain.

Pain was always the biggest enemy of sleep!

He didn't want to open his eyes. He didn't want to show his weakness in front of his old friend. He kept enduring it, fighting that pain with all his willpower.

His forehead was covered by sweat.

The veins started to pop up on his skins. He was enduring it with full effort. As he tried so hard to endure it, the veins also popped up, and he started to tremble...

He should be suffering such an intense pain...

Ye Xiao looked at Li Wuliang suffering the great pain. He started to sweat and murmur, "Erhuo... this... Is this what you call a great blessing? Great luck? Let me ask you... Who on earth could bear such fortune? Such luck?"

Erhuo meowed. It was disdainful.

"If he can't bear it, he should die..." Erhuo spoke indifferently, "Of course the great blessing comes with pain. You have to take a risk when you are having a great fortune. Nobody can acquire the great luck without paying any price. If he can't even endure some pain for it, he doesn't deserve the great fortune. Maybe it's better to let him die."

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He couldn't imagine a cat would actually say those cruel words.

He knew that it was the natural law that the stronger one survived!

However, he felt so bad watching his brother suffering. Li Wuliang was suffering the physical pain, but Ye Xiao was suffering pain in the heart!

Erhuo humped and looked at Li Wuliang. It was quite unsatisfied with him.

"Ghost Ganoderma, such a brilliant treasure, so precious, how

come it ended up being eaten by this stupid guy? I am the one who deserves such a great fortune... What a waste..." That was what Erhuo wanted to say. It was angry about it.

"I have gotten many profits. That's true. I have absorbed the soul power which should be better than Ghost Ganoderma, but... if I can have a Ghost Ganoderma too, that would be... excellent... That's annoying... Does god envy me?"

Ye Xiao was surprised and didn't know what to say about Erhuo's thought.

It was unbelievably selfish and arrogant.

However, Ye Xiao learned one thing from Erhuo's murmuring.

The soul power that it put in the Boundless Space was stronger than the Ghost Ganoderma.

In that demonic war, the contrary powers made the Ghost Ganoderma, but there was too much energy left. Year after year, the rest of the energy formed into the marvelous Chaotic Soul Clouds.

He and Erhuo should have absorbed at least ninety percent of the energy, while Li Wuliang had gotten no more than ten percent.

Well, Li Wuliang was suffering from the side affect, living in hell...

If what happened to Li Wuliang was a great fortune, a great blessing, what about Ye Xiao and Erhuo?

Ye Xiao decided to keep it a secret, not to tell Li Wuliang, in case it would be too much a strike to Li Wuliang!

"Erhuo... Listen... You can't have that kind of thought. When you have already eaten all the meat on the table, you better leave the soup to others... What you're thinking is wrong... You shouldn't..." Ye Xiao was speechless and he started to give Erhuo a lesson.

"Pah... I have eaten all the meat... Why can't I save the soup for

tomorrow? All good stuffs in the world should be mine! Meow!"

Erhuo raised up its head and waved its tail.

Then it saw Ye Xiao's dark face, so it hurriedly tried to make it up, "I mean, all should be ours, yours and mine! Together!"

"Fine. I guess it is the best I can expect from you." Ye Xiao rubbed his lower jaw and said, "Maybe the Ghost Ganoderma is a blessing from heavens... but how long does he have to endure the pain?"

"Meow, meow, meow..." What Erhuo meant was, "One must suffer before succeeding. Only when the darkness and the brightness mix together perfectly and become the power of bipolar chaos... would his cultivation be utterly improved... He can be invincible..."

Ye Xiao asked, "How long?"

Erhuo looked at Li Wuliang and hesitated for a while before it said, "About a dozen years... Maybe longer..."

Ye Xiao made a long sigh.

[Over ten years!]

[God damn it! You stupid cat... You don't understand human beings, do you?]

[For cultivators, over a dozen years doesn't seem a long time. Everybody would love to spend over a dozen years to become invincible. But... nobody could survive that pain for that long!]

[Not to mention Li Wuliang, even me, even though I know I would eventually become invincible after suffering the pain in hell for over a dozen years...]

[I don't want to be invincible, alright? I would rather hit my head on the wall to kill myself! That may make me feel better! I would never bear that pain like that!]

[Invincible... after over a dozen years...]

[To suffer such a pain every single day for over a dozen years...]

[Even god could never endure it!]

"Is there anything we can do to reduce the pain?" Ye Xiao sighed.

...

Chapter 924: Am I Really That Kind of Person?

"There surely is." Erhuo meowed. "However, the lesser the pain he will go through, the lesser the benefit he will receive."

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What?]

When the sun had risen up and shined, Li Wuliang finally got through the first wave of torturing pain. He was sober again. When he opened his eyes and lowered his head, he saw his own sweat flowing down on his face and dropping to the floor...

His sweat made a river, running to the quilt and soaking everything under him.

Ye Xiao finally knew how that rock became dark-colored. Li Wuliang would suffer such pain and sweat heavily like this every day. His sweat would soak the rock again and again and the color became darker and darker...

"Haha! How about that? Am I not strong?" Li Wuliang tiredly opened his eyes and looked at Ye Xiao. "I didn't even humped! Can you do this if you were me?"

Although he was suffering pain and exhausted at the moment, he talked spiritedly and proudly.

"Awesome! Admirable! Tough! I am ashamed!" Ye Xiao nodded.

"Don't show me that look. Do you have to?" Li Wuliang humped. "It was just pain. I am not dying... As long as I am still living, there is hope. Two years is a piece of cake. I can do it ten years, twenty years! I can do it forever! Until the day I return to my prime and shock the world again!"

Did he know he just predicted the future?

Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "I know you will... I know you are tough enough to do so... But, Li, don't you want to reduce the pain a bit?"

Li Wuliang's eyes lit up.

The light in his eyes were burning. "You know how to reduce the pain?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "I am not one hundred percent confident, but more or less. I guess you know the two powers in your body. They are two extremely strong powers. If we used other contradictory power to suppress the two types of power inside you, they may be reduced a bit. You will feel better... But... the more you suffer, the greater you will achieve. The Ghost Ganoderma is a great blessing to you. You will be tortured before you digest all the energy inside you... However, if you can bear it until the day you fully absorb the energy, you will be more or less invincible in the Qing-Yun Realm."

Li Wuliang was silent. He said, "Really? Hmm... The day... How long should I bear it for? Do you have an estimate?"

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a while and then said, "Less than twenty years... Maybe ten years."

"Ten years!"

Li Wuliang exclaimed.

After that, he was deeply lost in thoughts.

After one hour, that extreme pain struck on him again. He just sat there, lost in thoughts. He seemed to be in immense pain, suffering as his face twisted...

Yet he didn't move even a bit.

It lasted till the night came.

Ye Xiao took out some food and shared it to Li Wuliang. Li Wuliang was silent. He didn't speak a word.

After a while, the pain came to him again.

It lasted until midnight this time.

After midnight, the pain was gone again.

After that, he finally stood up. He stared at the wounds on his body being recovered. He stared at the wounds and spoke nothing.

After a while, he went to the entrance of the cave and stood there with two hands behind his back. He looked at the moonlights outside the cave, which was splashing on the snow, illuminating everything. It was so clean.

"Ten years... Ten years of extreme pain to become invincible in the Qing-Yun Realm!" Li Wuliang murmured, "Ten bloody rough years..."

Ye Xiao nodded. "Ten years suffering... It is too long. However, it is such a short time compared to our lives. I think it is worth it. I believe in you, my brother. You can do it. You can!"

"I have no fear for the ten years of suffering. Not at all." Li Wuliang blandly said, "I said it. I have been through it for two years already. I have been enduring it on my own for two years. Ten more years, even longer, is not a problem. My nerves must be much stronger than usual."

"Besides, now that you found me, I believe I will live a much better life than the last two years. As long as I can stay tough, that pain is just an easy case." He spoke quietly, "It is a good deal to suffer the pain for ten years and become invincible for the rest thousands of years in the Qing-Yun Realm."

"It is a good deal. It is cost-effective. I am sure you can get through the ten years. I trust you!" Ye Xiao said.

"I have faith! I know I can do it! But, what about you? I can spend ten years living in misery and waiting for the day when I become invincible. What about you guys?"

Li Wuliang turned around and stared at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao blandly smiled and said, "Brother, your business is my business. You just go focus on your plan. Don't worry about things you shouldn't worry about."

"Your brother's business is your business. I see. But isn't my brother's business also my business?" Li Wuliang seriously said.

That was twisting the tongue, but he said it in such a solemn tone.

"For the next ten coming years, will my brother give up revenge?" Li Wuliang asked Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was silent.

They both knew the answer!

"You fought against the three factions because of me. When you went to fight them, the most powerful forces, were you sure you could win? You are surely going to fight them again. Tell me, how many of you will die? Can you promise you will survive?" Li Wuliang sounded cold. "What if you died again? Ye Xiao? Do you think you will be lucky enough to get a third life?

"Even if you can, what about the other brothers? Are they also that lucky?

"How many people die for revenge? If I stayed behind everybody waiting to reach the stupid invincibility in Qing-Yun Realm and let you guys fight to death... What am I? If I hide behind and watch you bleed to death, what am I? Am I still Li Wulaing? Your brother?"

Li Wuliang got close to Ye Xiao and asked, "Do I look like a coward to you?"

...

Chapter 925: Precaution!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He said, "Sometimes you have to give up something as an exchange... Maybe if you can bear with it for ten years, you will have a whole life of... Maybe we should change our perspective to see the current situation. Look at you. What can you do? You are just a bit better than a burden to others. If your brothers died in the fight for you, you might be able to avenge them all ten years after when you showed up in the martial world again."

"It is never too late. You will just become our burden like this. Our enemy may kill us all if you go with us. If we all die, there will be no chance to defeat them ever again!"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "You must think about it."

Li Wuliang humped and coldly said, "I will become invincible after suffering this pain for ten years. However, can't I become invincible myself without this?"

"I would rather die side by side with my brothers than become invincible alone in the future!"

Ye Xiao made a sigh.

He knew Li Wuliang had made a decision as expected.

"I don't want the ten years blessing." Li Wuliang spoke decisively, "You know me well. I don't fear the pain.."

"I know. If I were you... I wouldn't make a different decision." Ye Xiao nodded.

Ye Xiao understood Li Wuliang. They were the same kind of person!

Maybe a lot of people would consider his decision as unwise, even stupid, but nobody could deny that men like that were always the brightest in the world. They would rather choose glory and honor!

They would rather die for their brothers!

"I want to shorten the time." Li Wuliang raised up his eyebrows and spoke in a heavy voice, "I want to go out there, laugh, and kill! I want to recover as soon as possible, go out there, and fight the three factions with you side by side!"

"The invincible Li Wuliang belongs to the future. Maybe I can spend ten years hiding behind the scene waiting to be invincible, but I will never get rid of the name as a coward! I will not waste my integrity!"

Li Wuliang stared at Ye Xiao with fever in his eyes. "Tell me! What can I do to shorten the process? How much can it be cut?"

Erhuo meowed because of admiration.

Li Wuliang gave up the ten years suffering. That meant he gave up the great fortune that billion people would dream for!

Did he give it up because of fear? Did he fear pain and torture?

Even Erhuo knew he didn't!

How could such a tough man fear pain?

Erhuo didn't understand why exactly Li Wuliang would give up such a great opportunity. In fact, brotherhood, love, and friendship, these things had indistinct meanings for Erhuo. However, it knew that Li Wuliang must have a great and honorable reason to do so. It was Erhuo's instinct. Erhuo believed in it!

That was why Erhuo was quite happy to help!

"Erhuo, what should we do to remove some of the power from the Ghost Ganoderma? We can't put Brother Li's life in risk!" Ye Xiao hurriedly asked in the Space.

"Your East-rising Purple Qi should be the buster of all kinds of demonic forces. You are too weak in cultivation, otherwise, the dark power in the ganoderma should be nothing compared to you." Erhuo blandly said, "To remove the power from the Ghost

Ganoderma, you just need to operate the bipolar power inside you, the cold power and hot power inside you at the same time to pull both of the powers inside his body. That should be able to drag out a part of the powers out from his body."

"I see." Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. "So, in your opinion, how much power should I extract? I can't extract it all, can I? To remove all the power at the same time, I am afraid he will get seriously hurt by the reverse effect!"

Erhuo rolled up its eyes and said, "It is the easiest to remove it all. He will be free from that suffering. His body has been enduring the pain for a long time. His body should be good enough to handle it. However... I suggest you remove eighty percent."

"Eighty?" Ye Xiao stared at Erhuo with a funny look. He was surprised.

He knew Erhuo quite well. That cat was a selfish, possessive animal that would do anything to snatch something it wanted. It was such a surprise that it actually gave up twenty percent of that enormous power!

"Why do you look at me like that? Twenty percent of that power remains in his body. He will finish digesting it within one year and recover his power. He may not become invincible in the realm, but he should be much stronger than he used to be!" Erhuo waved its tail and showed indifference to Ye Xiao.

"I believe what you just said. I agree. But I was surprised because you gave up the twenty percent! You are usually greedy!" Ye Xiao was interested, so he said.

"Meow. I know, I am a bit greedy, if you look at me in a certain perspective. However, I shared everything good to you. Besides, I am greedy, but all I got is benefiting you... Meow! Okay, I know. I won't argue. Li Wuliang seems to be a nice guy. What he said earlier seems to be honorable. I think he is right. That is why I decided to leave twenty percent for him!" Erhuo tried not to look

bashful.

And then Erhuo felt a bit regretful. "It is okay if you don't want me to leave any to him. I like that power a lot after all..."

"I see. I have to say the twenty percent must be the most of what Brother Li could take. It will take him one year. That is a good plan you are providing here." Ye Xiao's eyes lit up.

He then explained it to Li Wuliang. Li Wuliang couldn't wait and said, "What are you waiting for?"

He didn't even ask if there was any risk he had to take during the reduction process. He forgot to ask how on earth his old friend got to know such a marvelous skill, as if he wasn't surprised at all. He just kept urging Ye Xiao.

"I am totally fine. We can start at any time. There is one thing I have to make clear to you. Brother Li, there are two types of power inside your body. I don't think we should remove all. If I removed all the powers inside you, maybe you will suffer the reverse effect when the enormous power leaves your body. You will need to stay in bed resting for one full year until you are recovered.

"So I decided to leave twenty percent inside you. The twenty percent should be thoroughly digested within one year because you are familiar with the power already. In fact, you will have to spend one year staying behind either way!

"One more thing. You can't show yourself out in the martial world. I look completely different now. Nobody will know I am Xiao Monarch. If you go out there, there is a big chance people will recognize you.

"If we change places for you to stay, maybe we will be seen on the way. I think it should be safe to just stay here. I guess you should just stay in this cave for the coming days. I will go get everything you need." Ye Xiao said, "You have to promise me this before I start to deal with the powers inside you."

Ye Xiao knew about Li Wuliang the most in the world. Li Wuliang had such a hot temper. If he was free from suffering right away, he would rush out to the world and stir up some big troubles for sure, even though he was still weak at the moment.

When Li Wuliang was so powerful in the old days, he nearly died! Now he was so weak, so he would surely get himself killed out there!

Ye Xiao had to take precaution against such a situation.

...

Chapter 926: Can't Take the Risk!

Li Wuliang humped. He truly didn't like it. He said, "Of course you will make me promise! Look at you, nagging me like an old woman. It has just been one year and you became like a girl. Look at your little face. What a gigolo."

"Look, you are in a special situation. I will not fight you for this. Just promise me. Will you?" Ye Xiao wouldn't give in, "If you go out there, it is simply suicide. Instead of sending you out to get yourself killed, I would rather let you suffer the pain alone here! Just pretend I never found you!"

"You ruthless prick! I won't forget how you threaten me! Someday you will pay for this. Alright! I promise I won't go out and get myself killed! Happy?" Li Wuliang wasn't willing. He looked at the small cave. He made a long sigh thinking that he had to stay in this hole for one more year.

Human is a strange creature. One could become extremely brave and dynamic with the desire for survival. One could always survive the poorest and most difficult of situations. However, when one was saved from such a situation, none of the resources would be cherished!

He should have been tortured for another ten years before it was finished. However, now he was actually unwilling to spend one more year in this place! What a prick!

"Look. You have given me several lessons now. Let me have a rest and promise me one thing."

"Say it. As long as I am able to."

"Expand the cave for me. This is too small. Besides, I need food, drinks, clothes..." Li Wuliang was making a long list.

Ye Xiao looked at the greedy Fierce Blade and humped. He spoke in a weird voice, "Do you want some ladies too? You must be quite

thirsty for sex after the two years!"

Li Wuliang said, "Pah! Hell no! The women that you think are good, they won't fit my appreciation. however... what I just said, you must not miss anything of it. Otherwise, I will go to Jun Yinglian and tell her everything about you!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. "What? What did yo say? Are you really Fierce Blade? Are you sure you are not Fierce Prick? How come you have become so shameless now? I guess nobody can be more shameless than you!"

Li Wuliang angrily said, "Damn you! You got to live happily and leisurely out there and I have to stay in this sh*t hole for one year! How dare you call me shameless!"

Ye Xiao raised up two hands and said, "Fine... You are not shameless... You are my boss... Alright? Happy now?"

Li Wuliang humped. "That's better..."

...

Three days after.

Ye Xiao walked out the cave. Li Wuliang was lively. In fact, even when the dark power was torturing him, he looked lively too.

The cave didn't look different than usual from outside, but inside the cave...They had made it into a palace! It was dozens meters wide and deep!

Ye Xiao had kept the cold qi outside the cave and left lots of star flame stones, so that Li Wuliang could use them to keep warm. He implanted lots of luminous pearls on the wall of the cave. Even the corners of the cave were brightly lit up now. One after another, animal skins were placed on the rock in the cave. Suddenly, the cave looked luxurious...

In the three days, Ye Xiao spent the first day to remove eighty percent of the two enormous powers in Li Wuliang's body. The

night of the first day, they started to eat and drink, talking and laughing. Ye Xiao had stored lots of good liquor inside the Space, but the two of them drank it all in the two days.

The last ten jars of liquor were left in the cave for Li Wuliang.

The fourth day, Ye Xiao left the precipice for a whole day. The next day, he brought back two space rings to Li Wuliang. There were lots of food, meat, and liquor inside the ring...

There were also some medical materials and dan beads...

The sixth day.

Finally, Ye Xiao had to leave this place.

"I have to go, Li!" Ye Xiao smiled.

"Get out of here already!" Li Wuliang laughed. "You have been staying here for too long. The cave can't endure your gigolo's face... Hahaha..."

"Hahahaha..."

They were two unruly guys. They didn't say anything more.

Ye Xiao laughed and then flew out the cave like a shooting light. He jumped up on the snow outside the cave and immediately disappeared.

"Li, I will come back in a few months."

"Screw you!"

Li Wuliang was the last to speak.

...

Ye Xiao was gone.

Li Wuliang still had that casual and laughing face. After a while, he stopped smiling. Tears nearly shed out in his eyes. He coughed and murmured, "Screw it. It has just been a few days staying with a pretty gigolo... but I actually became a little bit girly... Damn. I almost wept. I won't forget this. You will pay for this. I am going to

kick your ass next time..."

He rubbed his eyes and took a long breath. He walked out the cave in stride, looking at the snow all around the valley. The mountains were so tall, reaching up to the sky. A big and warm smile showed up on his face. He murmured, "Brother..."

He turned around and looked at his Fierce Sword. His eyes were turning sharper. - Clang! - The cyan blade light shined.

Li Wuliang looked at the shining blade. It was like a hungry child, crying for blood.

"Don't worry, baby. It won't be long. You will get to drink enough blood from my enemies!"

...

Ye Xiao didn't go back to the mountain along the way he got down to the precipice.

He went to the other side and blocked the way to the cave.

Sky Soul Precipice was no longer a fatal dangerous place to people.

Before he found Li Wuliang, he had to keep the fissure, because it was a perfect place for him to set a sneak attack. If he attacked from below the cliff, people would be unprepared. People in Saint Sunlight Sect had been killed by Jun Yinglian, but their sect would definitely send more people to guard this place.

Whoever came here would never be weak. Some of them might even be strong enough to fight against Jun Yinglian.

Ye Xiao could basically keep himself unnoticed under the cover of this fissure. He could kill and disappear quickly.

He wasn't strong enough to kill the high-level cultivators, but he could sneakily kill some low-level cultivators. Besides, he might be able to luckily kill some superior cultivators using this fissure!

However, Li Wuliang was staying down there, cultivating

himself. That was why Ye Xiao decided to block the way to the cave.

No matter what, nothing was more important than his brother's life.

What if the fissure was found by the people of Saint Sunlight Sect...

Ye Xiao couldn't take that risk.

...

Chapter 927: Golden Hawk!

After a certain period of time, Ye Xiao and Li Wuliang would both return to their prime status. Ye Xiao wouldn't need to make any sneak attack on those people! The two of them could simply sweep them off...

Even if the three factions were powerful sects with lots of superior cultivators, they wouldn't be able to defeat Fierce Blade and Xiao Monarch at the same time!

It was a good plan, but Ye Xiao had to face the cruel truth at the moment. It was much more difficult to climb up along the new route. After all, he was surrounded by ice and snow. All could be seen was only millennial old ice. The space was getting narrower and narrower as he climbed up. It was a long way to get to the top of the mountain. Even Ye Xiao found it rather difficult.

However, all he should do was to be careful. It was difficult but not impossible. Ye Xiao was not that weak anymore after all. On the way up to the top, he actually even had time to pick a few Snow Lotus on the cliff.

That was a surprising gain.

When he climbed near the top of the mountain, he realized he was only less than 100 meters to the top. Where he was staying at was covered by mist and clouds. He couldn't even see his own hands.

He had been cautious, but he figured he should be more cautious now. What he wanted to do was to rush up to the top as quickly as he could before anything went wrong. However, it actually took him about eight minutes to reach the top.

When he stood on top of the mountain, he looked down upon the clouds. He was confused. [The clouds are covering the precipice from here. How did those birds get down to the cave? The birds

that Li Wuliang ate in the two years?]

[Was he blessed by heavens? Did the gods send birds to him?]

He didn't believe such an unreasonable thought himself. However, there shouldn't be any birds flying down to the cave. One or two birds, it might be an accident. But Li Wuliang only ate birds the past 3 years! That was strange!

While he was thinking about it, he heard a bright scream of a hawk. Suddenly, something showed up in the sky, shining with golden lights, and full of wild murderous qi.

Ye Xiao felt a strong momentum overwhelmingly approaching him.

He didn't panic. He quickly hid in a fissure of a huge rock. The rock covered his body, and he looked through the fissure to check that overwhelming momentum.

That the aura was strong and overwhelming, but not aiming at him. He must have accidentally fell into an area that some powerful creature was aiming at. Ye Xiao figured it was safe to peek!

In the sky, there were several grey hawks crazily flying over. They didn't look like conquerors in the sky at all. They were more like rabbits being hunted. They were flying down into the clouds.

Suddenly, a golden light shined in the sky and the sky seemed to have darkened.

A huge golden hawk showed up. Its wings must be at least thirty meters. It flew so fast like lightning. Within a blink, it already got to the sky upon the peak of the ice mountain. It was as big as a pony!

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[How could a hawk grow so big?]

[Is it still a hawk?]

[I guess the roc in the myth... should be no bigger than this!]

One of the several average-sized grey hawks didn't have time to get into the clouds. It was an iota away. The golden hawk caught it with its huge golden talons which were big like bear paws and had sharp claws.

The fleeing grey hawks were actually twice bigger than normal hawks. However, compared to this golden one, they were just powerless.

The grey hawk was moaning after getting caught in the golden hawk's talons. It didn't have the chance to struggle. Quickly, it died in the talons.

The golden hawk grabbed the grey hawk and flew round and round in the sky. Suddenly, it screamed loudly and threw the grey hawk's body up to the sky. After that... - Puff, puff, puff... -

It actually pecked on the grey hawk in the air. After a few seconds, the grey hawk's feathers were all gone. When the grey hawk finally had no feathers left, it started to fall.

However, the golden hawk grabbed it again, just like grabbing the food it prepared for itself.

Ye Xiao saw that hawk was leaving, so he looked carefully at the hawk.

That seemed to be a mistake! Something happened!

That golden hawk must have sensed Ye Xiao's gaze. Its golden eyes suddenly turned to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao felt that the fierce aura was suddenly aimed at him!

He was frightened! He knew he couldn't get away from this, so he immediately backward. When he just moved about ten meters away from his original position, the rock that he used to cover himself was broken into pieces! That was such a hard rock.

He felt his blood freeze in the head.

He had touched the rock, which was harder than steel, covered by the old ice! Even a Dao Origin Stage cultivator holding a divine weapon might find it extremely difficult to cut that rock.

However, the golden hawk only used one talon to decimate the rock!

The rock was directly broken into pieces!

What did that mean?

The golden hawk was unbelievably powerful in strength! Ye Xiao was sure that he was much stronger than a stupid rock, but could he survive the golden hawk's talons? He was afraid not! He would be at least severely damaged.

Things suddenly became so dangerous!

After seconds, Ye Xiao saw the eyes of the golden hawk. The eyes were big and vigorous, like two suns with golden contour, full of fierceness.

Ye Xiao was shocked. At the moment, East-rising Purple Qi operated in full power. Purple qi was coming out through every pore of his skin. He was overloading himself to run the enormous energy. All his power was activated at this moment!

Whether he could survive the current danger, he would surely be badly damaged afterwards! He might even be weakened in cultivation!

Life and death were decided in one moment. He decided to do whatever he could!

Only a living man could talk about future!

Ye Xiao's body was full of rising purple qi. - Shoot! - He suddenly backed off dozens of meters away. He actually jumped over the precipice over within a glimpse.

However, even though he had burst in rapid speed and moved away that fast, the golden hawk still pecked on his butt.

He had already hurt himself due to the extremely rapid movement, but he still couldn't safely get away from the hawk. The golden hawk was tremendously fast!

...

Chapter 928: Can You Speak Hawk Language?

The wound wasn't deep. When the golden hawk was just about to peck on Ye Xiao, he rapidly moved forward a bit. The golden hawk had just slightly touched Ye Xiao's butt before the latter got away.

The golden hawk was fast and strong, but it only left a small bloody hole on Ye Xiao's butt.

Ye Xiao was fine.

He didn't actually feel hurt when it pecked on him. When he arrived at the other side of the precipice, he started to feel pain on the butt. He reached his hand to touch it and saw blood on his hand.

He was frightened.

He was lucky to get away without any hesitation. If he hesitated and get away a bit later, he might have two assholes right now...

"That was fast!"

The Golden hawk was confident when it attacked Ye Xiao. When it realized it missed, it was shocked. It turned its head while looking at Ye Xiao fiercely.

[How does he... move so fast?]

[That's impossible...]

The Golden hawk was confused. Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He was like a rabbit being hunted by a hound. He was running so fast and got thousands of meters away within seconds...

The Golden hawk realized it and screamed with anger. It stretched out its two giant wings and flew over to Ye Xiao!

[How could a little human being escape from my talons!]

[That's such a wishful thought!]

[I do not allow this!]

Golden hawk was angry. It flew even faster now. As it moved, there were several residual shadows behind it. When it moved away, the space behind it was cracked. A dark black hole showed up in the air, twisting but then closing up slowly...

Ye Xiao was reaching his limitation, hurting himself to run as fast as he could to get away from the death zone. He had never known that there was actually such a huge-sized hawk in the realm...

[Where did that come from?]

Ye Xiao felt like he didn't know this realm anymore after being away for a period of time...

While he was running, he felt something covered the sky. He was suddenly in total darkness. The golden hawk caught up! It was flying over his head!

"Oh my bloody heavens... I am done..." Ye Xiao shouted, "Li Wuliang you bastard... This is all your fault... I care about you, watch out for you, supporting you... that's why I encountered this horrible thing..."

Apparently, he was totally freaking out. He talked nonsense and ran without purpose... That was not much better than a runaway dog...

"Erhuo, do you have any ideas? What do I do to deal with that thing up there?" Ye Xiao asked Erhuo as he was running. Erhuo was his last savior. It always brought miracles for him. When it was still Brother Egg, it killed Gu Jinlong. Not long before this, it finished those red and white clouds and chaotic soul power. Maybe it would do something about the golden hawk this time!

"What thing?" Erhuo was lying in the Space, face up, enjoying the wonderful service of a dozen snakes.

"A spiritual beast!" Ye Xiao urged, "Come quick!"

"Meow..." Erhuo was interested. It rushed out and stood on Ye Xiao's shoulder. It was going to show its strength to whatever it was up in the sky.

Suddenly, darkness fell on it. A golden hawk rushed down over to it

"Meow..." Erhuo was frightened. Its furs all stood up straight. Its voice changed, and its eyeballs became blue because of fear. It quickly turned around and immediately returned to the Space.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He was hoping Erhuo could play an overwhelming role to strike the hawk away. However, it actually fled after having one sight of the hawk...

What was going on?

In the Space, Erhuo was still scared. Even its whiskers were shaking. "Come on... Boss... That is the spiritual beast you said? ... You... You should have told me it's a flying beast... That scared the shxt out me..."

Ye Xiao was running and couldn't say a word.

[In this dangerous moment, you actually chickened out... and you blame me?]

"I thought you were good?" Ye Xiao asked awkwardly.

"I am good when dealing something else. This... This is a hell no..." Erhuo seemed frustrated.

"Why not?" Ye Xiao freaked out. [You fucking deserted me when I needed you...]

Erhuo shook its head and said, "I really can't do anything... That thing is not one of the Twelve Spirits... You have to defeat that thing with true power and my power is very likely a lot weaker than it... I am a small cat... I don't have the chaotic blood yet... It is understandable..."

"Twelve Spirits..." Ye Xiao nearly fainted.

[You have been acting arrogantly like you are invincible in the world. I believed in you. Yet it turns out you are just like this.]

[That's frustrating...]

Apparently, Ye Xiao didn't truly understand Erhuo. Twelve Spirits could be twelve beasts. However, maybe it was twelve kinds?

It was reasonable though. Ye Xiao was running for life at the moment. He didn't have time to think about his words. All he cared was whether Erhuo could help him or not... He didn't care about the reason...

The golden hawk was over Ye Xiao's head now. Ye Xiao had tried so hard, even to the point of hurting himself, just to rush out a certain distance. However, within such a short time, the hawk had caught up. He was not going to get away from this.

He couldn't flee nor could he defeat the hawk. What should he do? Was he going to be the hawk's food in submission?

He was slower than the hawk. He was weaker than the hawk. Eventually, he decided to try to outwit the hawk!

He calloused and stopped right away. He was praying in the head, [Please, let the hawk speak.]

The hawk was over Ye Xiao's head. It was going to rush even faster so as to catch Ye Xiao. It didn't expect Ye Xiao to stop by himself.

It flew over Ye Xiao hundreds of meters ahead and then stopped itself. It waved its enormous wings and then actually flew backwards.

It stared at Ye Xiao with its two golden eyes. It looked confused.

"Holy heavens!" Ye Xiao was astonished. "The... The hawk can fly backward? What the hell? Is it sick? A monster? Evil?"

It totally overturned Ye Xiao's knowledge.

However, no matter how astonished he was, he had to stop. The hawk was about to make a strike right there.

Ye Xiao knew that if the hawk hit him, he would definitely die. It was overestimating himself to think that he would survive its attack!

"Wait!" Ye Xiao stood straight up and said, "Brother Hawk! We should talk!"

The hawk flew up a dozen Zhang. It stared at Ye Xiao. It seemed confused and was definitely hostile.

[Is this man... talking to me?]

[But... I don't think he speaks hawk language...]

[Can you speak hawk language?]

...

Chapter 929: Don't You Play Foolish!

[I know you are talking to me, but I don't know what the hell you are talking? Hmm... Why do I care? I should just go kill him. Shouldn't I?]

The golden hawk suddenly rushed down from the sky, with its talons aiming at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao rushed aside awkwardly and escaped that attack. - Crack! - His robe was torn off. Ye Xiao waved his hand and said, "Brother Hawk! You are a hawk king! Can't you understand my words?"

The golden hawk didn't even hesitate this time. It just rushed to Ye Xiao and waved its talons! - Shoot! -

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao dodged again. However, a piece of cloth was ripped off from his pants...

"Brother Hawk! Please! Don't you know what I am talking about? You should do!" Ye Xiao was in despair. He couldn't communicate with the hawk. What should he do? Was he going to die again?

The golden hawk attacked Ye Xiao again, but with a weaker power. Ye Xiao could feel it. This time, he perfectly dodged the attack. He didn't get hurt.

He didn't understand.

[Why?]

[Why would the hawk king show mercy?]

He didn't know that the hawk wasn't quite interested in killing humans. It was just angry.

The golden hawk had experienced and known that humans didn't taste good!

Human flesh was sourer than horse meat.

Some people's bodies were even stinky... It had grabbed a person once, trying to eat him, but that person actually sh*t its pants. That nearly drove the hawk to death...

All in all, it considered human being as unsavory food!

If Ye Xiao knew what the hawk thought about eating him, he would praise the gods. He would definitely shout, 'I am a stinky man! I am unsavory!'

He would be so grateful to the man who was caught by the hawk while having a full belly of sh*t. At least, he would burn some incense to that person. 'Man, you and your poo really saved my life...'

Ye Xiao dodged the attacks from the hawk several times. He was safe. The golden hawk was getting angry again. The murderous qi around the place was rising again.

[I was trying to be gentle... How dare you act like you could really fight me...]

[Can't you just let me grab you and die. Why do you keep dodging? Fine. Let's see how long you can insist...]

Ye Xiao realized the hawk was attacking faster. He knew things were getting worse. He grabbed something from inside his clothes and something red showed up in his hand. "Brother Hawk! Look! Do you want to eat this?]

He was sweating.

This was his last chance.

If the golden hawk wasn't interested in it at all, he might very possibly die.

It was a red-colored blood bead in his hand. It was spreading a light scent.

That was the blood bead that Erhuo made with those Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes!

The hawk suddenly opened its eyes widely and rushed down towards Ye Xiao without saying anything.

It was fierce, overwhelming, and murderous.

Before it touched the ground, it had made the dust rise and roll up on the ground, as if something was about to explode.

"Holy heavens!" What happened was out of his expectation. The hawk was much fiercer. He hurriedly ran away to the cliff... [I guess I should better go back down there and stay with Li Wuliang...]

[A few days later, I will come back again. Will the hawk wait here for that long? I don't know. I just can't stay here anymore... Not today...]

Suddenly, he was covered by darkness again. - Shoot! - It was shining in golden lights. The hawk was rushing down over.

It stopped right in front of Ye Xiao, blocking his way.

Its big round eyes stared at Ye Xiao fiercely. It slowly started to withdraw its giant wings. Its two talons stood on two rocks, one higher while the other lower, like a man crossing its legs...

It just stood on the rocks, but in Ye Xiao's eyes, it was even bigger than a camel...

The golden hawk stared at Ye Xiao like staring at the most delicious food in the world.

Ye Xiao sighed.

There was no way out now.

The hawk was too fast!

Even in his previous life, he couldn't compare to this hawk on speed... It was just so strange... The hawk was so powerful, yet even Xiao Monarch had never heard of it.

"Every time when I am feeling good, something will happen and

strike the sh*t out of me..." Ye Xiao sighed. "Am I that unlucky? Is my life destined to be so miserable?"

After a while, the golden hawk still didn't do anything.

He raised his head and saw the golden hawk stare back at him. Hmm... No. It was staring at his hand.

"Oh... What are you waiting for?" Ye Xiao was surprised and asked a stupid question.

The golden hawk was still staring at his hand, slightly waving its talons. It suddenly stretched out one wing. It was over ten meters long, covering the sky. The other wing reached over to the stretched wing, rubbing it...

It was like a man tickling himself because he was bored...

Ye Xiao was shocked by what he saw. The hawk looked like a human!

[What the hell is this monster?]

[It doesn't speak, yet it acts like a person!]

[It was trying to kill me just now. What? Why is it so nice now?]

[Is it going to tease me? Play me around?]

[Play me around till I die?]

The golden hawk slightly moved its head aside. It was confused. It looked at Ye Xiao, and slowly, it was getting angry again. It lowered its head and grunted, waving its huge wings again.

It grunted again.

Ye Xiao didn't know what it meant at all!

He was blank in the head. [What? The hawk... What happened to it? Why is it so different? Isn't it too theatrical?]

He opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but had no idea what to say. Even if he said anything, the hawk wouldn't understand. He had to just shrug.

The golden hawk was pissed.

[What? Stop playing foolish already!]

It walked over to him with huge strides. Its long beak accurately bit on Ye Xiao's right hand.

Ye Xiao was stunned. [What? So it doesn't want me... It just want my hand... I am done... I am going to be the single-armed Xiao Monarch... Laughing at all heroes? I am going to be laughed at...]

However, he didn't feel pain in the right hand as he expected. In fact, he just felt his right hand being touched. His hand was fine.

The golden hawk was looking for something in his hand. [You evil man. You can't speak hawk language... I get it. Why do you have to pretend to be a fool...]

...

Chapter 930: Lure

In fact, the golden hawk didn't bite him at all.

It just put Ye Xiao's right hand in its mouth, instead of biting him. That was harmless!

[What the hell?]

Ye Xiao was confused. [Brother Hawk... Great Hawk... What do you want?]

Then he saw the hawk holding his hand in the mouth and staring at Ye Xiao's palm. It seemed pretty confused while looking at his right hand.

The golden hawk didn't understand. [This man just turned over his hand and that yummy bead showed up in his hand. I am holding his hand now, but I don't see anything!]

[Where is it?]

[Is it inside his arm? Maybe I should bit his hand off? Wait... I can't kill a chicken to take the egg inside it. What if there is nothing inside his arm? I won't get anything out of this guy! What to do?]

[Oh right. I don' know it. He knows. He is the only person who knows. He took it out once!]

Thinking about this, it raged up again. [Is he doing this on purpose? Did he intentionally hide the bead?] It let loose Ye Xiao's hand and screamed to Ye Xiao. "Coo, coo, coo..."

That meant, [Give it to me, give it to me, give it to me...]

Ye Xiao didn't understand that, but he felt that the hawk might be desperately asking for something but couldn't get it.

He thought for a while and then said with brightly shining eyes, "Are you looking for that bead? That red-colored bead?"

Golden hawk clapped with its huge wings. That blew up sands and rocks right away. It said, "Coo, coo, coo..."

It seemed the hawk was feeling worse, but Ye Xiao felt relieved instead. He realized the blood bead was useful at the moment!

That was great.

He was still in great danger, so he didn't dare to be reckless. He took out another blood bead and reached out his hand. "Come on."

The blood bead was shining right there, rolling in the palm of Ye Xiao. Golden hawk saw it and its eyes lit up bright. It pecked on it immediately.

- Puff! -

"AH!"

Ye Xiao exclaimed.

A blood hole appeared in his hand.

The hawk was in a hurry when it saw the blood bead. It wanted to eat it as soon as it could, so it didn't control its strength when it pecked. That was why it puncture a hole in Ye Xiao's hand, on which there was the blood bead!

The golden hawk was frightened by Ye Xiao's exclamation when it was chewing the blood bead. It looked up with a blank mind. The bead was still in its mouth. It stopped chewing as it stared at Ye Xiao's bleeding hand. It was shocked and nervous.

It apparently realized it had done something wrong about the man who gave it food!

[No... If he doesn't give me more... it will be useless to eat this one!]

"You bloody fool..." Ye Xiao shouted with anger, pointing at the bleeding hand with the other hand, "Can't you decently eat the blood bead? Why peck it in a hurry? Nobody is going to snatch it from you! No other birds! How could you hurt my hand? What?"

Are you telling me you have a sharp beak or what?"

Ye Xiao was raging up with fury. In fact, in his heart, he felt lucky that the blood bead worked!

He was safe now as long as the hawk liked the blood beads. He wouldn't mind being hurt worse!

The hawk saw Ye Xiao waving his hands angrily, so it felt embarrassed. It swallowed the blood bead in its mouth quickly and slapped with two huge wings. "Coo, coo... coo, coo... coo, coo, coo..."

Ye Xiao didn't know what it was saying, but he could feel that it was sorry.

"Humph!" Ye Xiao humped and thought, [It just gave up killing me because I have the blood beads. But it doesn't understand human language. How do I communicate with it? There is always danger if we can't communicate. I am just like a meat in its plate. This is not good! Not good!]

[What to do?]

The hawk made a few sounds again. Ye Xiao didn't answer it. It thought Ye Xiao must be angry. It was nervous now.

[It seems this human is angry... Hmm... do I get to eat that thing again?]

[That's reasonable. If somebody hurts me, I will hate that guy forever. I surely won't give the person anything!]

[That red small thing was truly delicious. It contains lots of pure blood essence and spiritual qi. It enhances my power and improves my physical strength. It can even slowly cure diseases and nourish my body...]

[I want more.]

[This man's flesh... I don't even want to touch it... It tastes sour... It only increases the weight of my feces... Useless trash. The red

small thing is great.]

The hawk was nervous now.

Ye Xiao didn't know that in the hawk's mind, he was much useless than a blood bead—in fact, he was just as useless as a pile of sour feces...

If he did, he might have screamed loudly telling the hawk how much more useful and delicious he was compared to blood bead!

Ye Xiao was thinking about solutions. Suddenly, the hawk had come before his eyes. He was covered in its shadow. Its brushy big head was rubbing his hand flatteringly.

It cooed.

[It seems... this big thing... is... apologizing?]

Ye Xiao opened up his eyes.

[Is this thing...]

Ye Xiao was bodacious. Things were totally different now. He decided to test the waters, so he cautiously reached out its hand to touch the hawk's head.

The hawk suddenly backed off a few steps. It stared at Ye Xiao with its round big eyes. The anger in its eyes and the killing intent made it seem like it was about to burst in anger. [How dare this human touch my head?]

Ye Xiao was a bit pissed.

[Screw you! You took advantage of me! You hurt my body! You ate my thing! Now you don't even allow me to touch your stupid head? Is there even justice anymore?]

[Humph!]

Ye Xiao turned over his hand and there was another blood bead in it.

The hawk looked at the blood bead and stopped being angry

anymore. It didn't want to hurt anybody. Looking at the blood bead, it looked extremely in need of it.

Ye Xiao humped and put away the blood bead. He turned around and prepared to leave.

The hawk was so nervous. It hurriedly jumped to the front of Ye Xiao, looking at him in confusion and dissatisfaction. [You want to leave like this? Never!]

Ye Xiao pointed at his injured hand, which was still bleeding.

The hawk obviously felt sorry for it. It shook its head. "Coo, coo, coo..."

Ye Xiao made a gesture as if he was touching something and rolled up his eyes. After which, he left with dissatisfaction. That was clear. [You won't let me touch you. Fine. I have no business with you anymore.]

Apparently, he was being insatiable now.

He was worried about his life earlier, yet now he was angry that he couldn't touch the hawk's head.

Man's desire did change along with the environment. That was just a few minutes earlier, yet he was completely different!

The hawk stared at Ye Xiao's back. It didn't know what to do so it only slapped its huge wings. In its eyes, there were trouble and regret.

After a while, it flew in front of Ye Xiao, with its wings stretched, standing on the way. "Coo, coo... Coo, coo, coo..."

Ye Xiao was delighted.

The hawk was exactly like a kid who stood in the way of the adults, asking for sweets.

...

Chapter 931: I Can't Touch You?

Ye Xiao was dissatisfied. He shook his head and took out the blood bead again. He waved the hand and then put the bead back into the pocket. He pointed at the bleeding hand and then pointed at his ragged clothes too.

He reached out one hand to make a gesture of touching and then withdrew it quickly. That meant, [My clothes is tattered by you. My body is hurt. You took advantage of me and made me look this stupid. How could you not even allow me to touch you? You actually want to eat my priceless thing and take advantage of me again? There is no such thing!]

He humped.

The hawk seemed even more apologetic. It shook its head and cooed. It was touched. However, there were doubts in its eyes. Its two talons kept rising up and getting down to the ground again and again.

Ye Xiao had been staying with Erhuo for a long time. He was good at body language. He couldn't fully understand the hawk's words, but he roughly got it. The hawk must be negotiating. [Well we can be friends, but you can't touch my head! That's the bottom line!]

However, the hawk wasn't Erhuo. It couldn't make a mind connection to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao still felt like talking to a mute. He shrugged and then took out the blood bead again, waving it in the air.

The hawk was thrilled again.

Ye Xiao didn't put the bead back. He casually threw it out. The hawk shot out rapidly and bit the bead before it touched the floor. Without hesitation, it swallowed it immediately. It kept swinging its two huge wings. It must be quite happy, dancing around like a human. That was quite a powerful happiness. As it swung its

wings, it created a whirlwind. The snow on the ground was rolling and blotting out the sky.

Ye Xiao got choked by a full mouth of snow as he didn't prepare for such incidence... "Cough, cough, cough..."

He thought for a while and took out several more blood beads. The hawk stopped as its pair of eyes shone with greedy lights.

Ye Xiao humped and made a gesture of touching. He put away the beads again and turned around.

That was clear. He was forcing the hawk.

[You want to eat these? I have plenty more! But if you don't let me touch your head, I won't give any of them to you! Let's see who is going to submit!]

The hawk was anxious as expected.

When Ye Xiao turned his back to it, it hurriedly got close to Ye Xiao, held his belt in its mouth and pulled him. However, it was so careful to make sure it wouldn't hurt him anymore.

It was afraid that Ye Xiao would never give any more blood beads to it if it hunted him...

[You can't leave!]

[I won't let you go!]

[Those delicious things... You can't leave!]

After all that had happened, it finally went to the current situation.

Ye Xiao was moving forward so hard while the hawk was pulling him backward and stuck its two talons in the floor. It kept holding Ye Xiao's belt in its mouth.

That was so awkward. Something was turning longer and longer —his belt.

Ye Xiao even moved forward harder while the hawk wouldn't let

go. The hawk's neck was getting longer too. That was how awkward and hilarious it was.

Ye Xiao's belt was of good quality, but it was still just a belt. While they were competing in strength in such a funny way, the belt would fracture as expected. After a while, it did. - Pah! -

Well, Ye Xiao wasn't quite prepared for it. - Puff! - He fell on the ice right away and then kept sliding forward dozens of meters away. The hawk suddenly lost balance too. It kept moving backward and then eventually fell back on the ice.

Ye Xiao reacted quickly. He quickly got up and rushed over to the hawk. The hawk was still lying on the floor with its talons pointing up. It looked upset about this. [I actually got put down by a human... This is awkward...]

Ye Xiao was furious. He shouted, "What the hell are you doing? I can't talk to you. Fine. Can't I leave? Why did you pull my belt?" He clapped on his butt, which was barely covered by any cloth. "Why the f*ck did you tatter my pants and clothes? What were you thinking?"

The hawk cooed. It seemed panicking. Its round big eyes actually blinked with innocence, then it cooed again.

It was obviously frightened by Ye Xiao's angry shout.

"Look how miserable I am now! I can't even touch your head? How are we going to get along?" Ye Xiao scolded, "Do you really have to? Look at you! Think of it. Look what you have done to me! Yet you shamelessly ask for food?"

The hawk was lying on the ground, watching Ye Xiao, who was raging in fury. It didn't dare to make a sound.

When it showed up, it was overwhelming like a conqueror. However, it wasn't now. It was like an oppressed young wife.

It didn't dare to say anything.

Ye Xiao had been running like a fugitive. He was so scared that he would be killed. However, now he seemed in charge. He felt so good to be in control at the end.

In fact, he looked more like an ignoble man intoxicated by success!

He was almost naked, shouting arrogantly. He truly didn't fit any good words at the moment!

After a while, the hawk realized that it should get up first. It turned over and stood up, looking at Ye Xiao. It cooed again.

That sounded so sad.

[How can you blame me? If you didn't run away, I wouldn't pull you back...]

[If I didn't pull you back, your belt would be fine...]

[How can you blame me on breaking your belt... Why can't you blame the belt for its poor quality...]

Ye Xiao surely couldn't understand it.

However, he wasn't quite determined to go through.

The hawk showed its weakness, but it never actually changed the situation. The hawk with the sharp talons was the one who controlled everything. It could kill Ye Xiao within seconds with its claws. Before the situation changed, Ye Xiao could never really leave safely!

Ye Xiao and the hawk stood face to face. The golden feathers on the hawk were shining with vigor. Ye Xiao was wearing tattered clothes. It barely covered his butt.

However, he looked vigorous and arrogant, while the hawk was lowering its head in frustration.

"Can I touch it or not? Last chance!" Ye Xiao reached out one hand again.

The hawk hesitated. It was born a conqueror in the sky. It couldn't just let a human ruin its dignity. It shook its head.

Ye Xiao turned around and left, cursing, "You actually still won't let me! So you get to have all the advantages? What the hell is in your stupid head! I am off..."

The hawk stopped him again.

They stood face to face again!

"Will you let me?"

...

Chapter 932: Babyish Golden Hawk

He asked the hawk again.

The hawk hesitated for a long time. It murmured, trying to explain how helpless it was on such a matter.

[It's not like I don't allow you to touch my head. It's just... I am a king after all... I have my own dignity to protect... I can't let you touch my head... I am helpless about it...]

It was such a shame that Ye Xiao couldn't understand even a word of it. In fact, even if he could, he would pretend not. He saw the hawk shake its head again, so he turned over and left again.

[I don't care what reasons you have. I will leave unless you let me touch your head...]

The hawk stopped him again. It was so anxious that its eyes started to turn red. It kept shaking its head and screaming.

Ye Xiao acted even arrogantly, "Are you going to let me or not? No? Are you sure? ..."

...

It repeatedly happened over a dozen times. The hawk could only think about the wonderful red blood bead. It smelled so good...

Eventually, it lowered its head.

"Can I touch you now?"

"Coo, coo..."

"Stop coo, coo, coo! Nod or shake!"

The hawk looked so upset. It finally nodded slowly...

Ye Xiao was thrilled with joy. [I finally got you!] He reached his hand forward to touch the hawk's head...

The hawk stepped back subconsciously, keeping away from his hand.

Ye Xiao was pissed, so he immediately turned over.

The hawk rushed over to stop him. Ye Xiao changed direction. The hawk stopped him again. He turned to another direction again. He didn't even look at the big bird.

He was clearly showing his attitude. [I am off this game!]

Finally, the hawk submitted. When it stopped Ye Xiao for the last time, it moved close to Ye Xiao and stuck his head into Ye Xiao's arms. [Come on, Boss. I will let you touch my head. I will keep my head in front of you so that you can touch it any way you want. Happy now?]

[Just go touch wherever you want on my head...]

However, Ye Xiao moved away. No matter where he went, the hawk caught up with him and moved its head to him. Ye Xiao moved again, and the hawk caught up again...

When Ye Xiao wanted to touch it, it didn't allow him. Now the hawk wanted him to touch it, so as to show its sincerity, but Ye Xiao didn't agree to it.

He just kept his two hands hanging on both sides as if they were disabled... He just wouldn't touch it...

The hawk had put its head into his arms, yet he just wouldn't move the hand.

That was a clear message. [What? Oh, I don't get to touch you when you don't let me. Now you want me to touch you, so I should do as you want? No way. Who cares...]

The hawk was frustrated.

[Why is this man so stubborn?]

[He begged to touch me, but I just couldn't let him. Fine. Now I decided to let him do it. I am actually begging him. Yet he won't do it now. What the hell is this... What should I do with this?]

[If he really doesn't touch me... doesn't it mean that I can't have

that delicious little thing anymore...]

The hawk was upset. However, as they repeatedly moved and stopped, the hawk suddenly lit up the eyes.

Ye Xiao still moved away again. The hawk rushed in front of him but didn't stick its head to him anymore. Instead... it moved toward Ye Xiao's right hand...

Within one moment, it had rubbed his hand with its head twice already...

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What the fxck? You are twisting the truth now! You made that happen without me! How could you do that?]

[What an unsportsmanlike stupid bird!]

The hawk finally got 'touched'! It excitedly screamed. That was happy! It kept shouting, "Coo, coo, coo, coo, coo...." Like it had just won a tough fight.

[Hahahahaha... I finally got touched...]

[It has been done! You are not going to deny it!]

...

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[I can't believe this.]

He looked at the hawk as if the hawk was telling him, "I was touched. You had your fun... Now it's my turn..." It was apparently shown on the hawk's face. Ye Xiao wished he could just pass out immediately.

The conqueror of the sky, the king with dignity... the hawk that wouldn't let anybody to touch its head, actually felt overjoyed because it got touched...

That was... unbelievable... Things could truly become unpredictable in the world...

...

After a while, Ye Xiao was sitting in a huge rock. He looked solemn.

However, with the tattered clothes on him, he just looked hilarious at the same time!

The hawk was standing beside him, shaking its head happily. After a while, Ye Xiao reached out one hand and stopped it in the air. The hawk hurriedly moved its head over to touch the hand. It even slightly moved its head to make it like the hand was touching it... The hand didn't move a bit. It was the head that's moving...

However, after it did that, a blood bead would show up in that hand!

It was red!

It smelled so good!

It was delicious...

It was such a happy moment...

The hawk was enjoying it...

It felt so great...

After communicating, or threatening the hawk for a long time, they were already getting well along with each other.

The hawk was standing beside a huge rock. Ye Xiao leaned on the hawk in a comfortable posture. He felt so warm. He didn't feel the cold at all. The hawk's belly was slightly moving up and down. It covered Ye Xiao with its huge wings to protect him.

Erhuo had come out from the Space now.

When Erhuo and the hawk looked in the eyes, Ye Xiao realized there was something strange.

Erhuo half-closed its eyes while the hawk tilted its head a bit. Erhuo showed the hawk a disdainful look, and the hawk shouted

with arrogance. Erhuo walked over to the hawk in elegant pace. It raised up two paws and waved in the air. The hawk seemed hesitating. It didn't move.

Erhuo waved again. The hawk shouted sadly and then lowered its head.

Erhuo jumped up on the hawk in a vigorous and arrogant look.

Ye Xiao felt that something serious had just happened.

However, he didn't know what the two animals were talking about.

"Meow, meow?" Erhuo said. 'Little thing, how old are you? I mean how many years has it been since you were born? I mean how long have you been living?'

"Coo, coo, coo..." The hawk. 'I am seventeen. How about you? May I ask with respect, how old are you?'

"Meow, meow, meow..." Erhuo was acting arrogant. 'Well, you are lucky to have a good manner! I am old enough to be your ancestor!'

"Coo, coo..." The hawk. 'Well, hello! Ancestor!'

"Meow..." Erhuo fell down and showed the hawk a pair of embarrassed eyes.

[Holy heavens. This little thing is absolutely genuine and naive... How can you believe whatever others say to you... It sucks to take advantage of such a silly bird!]

...

Erhuo was walking on the hawk. From time to time, it would find some big lice and it would pinch them to death. Ye Xiao was surprised. He couldn't believe there were so many lice on the hawk's body. It was such an elegant and strong golden hawk after all...

For Erhuo, it was unbearable to see so many lice living on the

hawk's body. It was a neat freak cat after all.

"Meow..." Erhuo stared at the hawk disdainfully. 'How could you be so dirty? How can you carry so many lice on you? I can't imagine how you survived that. I am so looking down upon you...'

"Coo, coo..." The hawk lowered its head humbly. 'I am helpless with that... My beak can't reach those places...'

"Meow, meow, meow, meow..." Erhuo. 'Don't find yourself excuses for your impurity. That is so low. I can't even talk to you!'

"Coo, coo..." The hawk shouted. 'What? Impurity? Low? Can't talk to me? What do you mean? I can't understand! But they sound so exclusive!'

Ye Xiao could feel that the hawk was incredibly powerful in strength. However, it was too naive, as if it had never been living in the world.

...

Chapter 933: Flaming Needle

If only considering the hawk's pure strength, even in Ye Xiao's previous life, Xiao Monarch couldn't defeat the hawk. It was so powerful! However, it was like a four years old kid!

At the moment, after being told by Erhuo, he realized the hawk was just seventeen years old!

For normal hawks, seventeen was old enough. It should be an adult hawk or even an old hawk. However, for a golden hawk, such a special species, it was long before growing up. It was just a little older than a baby... It was totally immature...

It was naive and babyish in all aspects. It just did things that it felt happy to do. That was why it would be restrained by Ye Xiao with the use of some blood beads.

If it was an adult hawk, it would just kill Ye Xiao and snatch the beads... Ye Xiao would have been killed earlier... and become a pile of feces...

...

Hot spring!

It was steaming.

After communicating with the hawk for some time, they became close. In the end., the hawk held Ye Xiao's arm with its beak, like a child who had found a good friend and had received a gift from him. It decided to show him kindness as a return, so it kept dragging Ye Xiao to its home...

Ye Xiao couldn't turn it down. He didn't quite dare to turn it down... so he came...

After walking for a while, he found that there was a hot spring on top of the cold ice mountain!

What surprised him most was that the water was truly so hot.

Erhuo immediately suggested they should take a hot bath in it.

Oh, Erhuo didn't mean Ye Xiao should take a bath. It just wanted the hawk to clean itself carefully in the hot water!

For Erhuo, the priority was to make the hawk become purely clean!

Even after finding and killing so many big lice on the hawk's body, Erhuo still couldn't bear it. It decided not to let the hawk go since the hot spring water was just before their eyes.

Poor hawk. Since it was born, it hadn't had a bath ever. Now it was pushed down in the hot water and got cleaned toughly.

In the beginning, when it first got pushed down to the water, it screamed with grief. Unavoidably, it choked with a full mouth of water.

Perhaps birds that didn't fear water didn't exist. After all, water was the natural enemy of their feathers. The hawk was pushed so hard in the water. It couldn't resist the fear that rose up in the heart. When it was about to rage up with fury, it realized that it was quite comfortable staying in the hot water... [Oh? It turns out to be quite good...]

With a man carefully cleaning every feather on its body, it felt so great. It used to feel permanently itchy on the body since quite a long time before this, but now, it didn't anymore. Instead, it only felt comforted and relaxed...

[This is so good!]

[This is great!]

[This man must be the nicest man in the world!]

After cleaning the hawk, Ye Xiao was ready to leave the hot water. However, he found the hawk was lying in the water and wouldn't get up...

Its round golden eyes stared at Ye Xiao in the eyes with

innocence. It was begging him in such childish way. It just wouldn't get out.

[This is so good... I am not leaving this comfortable place...]

Ye Xiao was surprised. [What? Don't you fear water anymore? What? Now you love it?]

The hawk was quite upset about it too. [I have been flying over, watching this bubbling hot spring for thousands of times. I just never knew it could be so good to stay in the water... I have wasted a hell lot of days!]

[My feathers will get wet. So what? Can't I just let it dry? What harm does it do? Look at me now. Clean and clear. No more itch... So good...]

Ye Xiao apparently didn't know how to get it out, so he just stayed with it at the spring for a while. He even fed the hawk two blood beads. However, when the hawk ate the second bead, something was wrong.

The hawk suddenly spirited up dramatically and then froze.

After a while, a fishy and stinky smell started to spread from inside its body...

"Meow..." Erhuo shouted. It immediately ran off the water, covering its nose. It actually shot out far in distance. [That is so fucking stinky! That stinks the shxt out of me! Holy heavens!]

The hawk seemed suffering badly. It could be seen in its two eyes.

"Are you bearing wounds?" Ye Xiao nearly passed out because of the stink. However, when he saw how painful the hawk was, he realized what it might be.

"Coo, coo..." The hawk painfully looked at Ye Xiao.

As he expected, it was hurt. It had been staying in this place, because it wanted to use the coldness this place to suppress the pain. That was its instinct.

However, it couldn't cure the wound.

It stayed in the hot water. That comforted it very much, but it also activated its wound.

Ye Xiao was shocked. He hurriedly walked over to the hawk and checked its body. The hawk knew that he was checking it, so even though it was extremely painful, it didn't move away. It even pointed somewhere on its back with its own wing.

That made it easier for Ye Xiao to find the wound. On the back of the hawk, there was a place which was different from the others. It didn't have enough feathers!

He checked on it carefully and found there was a dark purple lump. In the center of the lump, there was a tiny needle hole.

"I don't think it had this lump earlier..." Ye Xiao frowned, "Is it the temperature change? Is it the reason why it became worse? But... it must have been hit by a human's hidden weapon... How come this wound looks so familiar..."

As he already found the wound, it wouldn't be such a difficult work to take care of it.

The hawk was powerful, but there was nothing it could do to deal with the wound on its back. It could only use the surroundings to suppress it. Ye Xiao was definitely much weaker, but it was a piece of cake for him to cure such a wound!

Ye Xiao carefully cut the lump. The hawk was shaking because of pain. It cooed in pain. However, it tried not to move. It even stuck its beak deep into the rocks...

It apparently knew Ye Xiao was curing it. What a cognitive bird!

"Needle!" After a while, Ye Xiao finally figured out what the weapon was. It was a red narrow needle. When he took out the needle from inside the hawk's body and looked at it carefully, he was shocked. "Flaming Needle! Wu Fa!"

The Flaming Needle was exactly the well known exclusive hidden weapon of the No. 1 cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm, Wu Fa.

...

Chapter 934: Speed of the Hawk!

As it was said that once a person was hit by the Flaming Needle, one's blood would boil and eventually burn the flesh and blood into nothing. There was nothing that could cure it.

It was a certain-kill hidden weapon! However, unexpectedly, Ye Xiao found that needle in a bird's body!

More unexpectedly, the hawk had actually lived for such a long time after being hit by Wu Fa's Flaming Needle. According to the wound... it had been at least half a year since the hawk was hit by the needle. Ye Xiao couldn't see the hole when he first checked the lump.

"That is amazing!" Ye Xiao took a deep breath.

He wasn't praising Wu Fa. He praised the hawk.

The hawk barely knew anything. It just hid in this place, so as to prevent the wound from getting worse with the coldness in this place. It followed its instinct to use the coldness to suppress the flame of the needle...

It actually lasted for such a long time!

In fact, if not for the hot water, it could very possibly last for a lot longer. Ye Xiao thought he was overestimating the hawk to Xiao Monarch, his previous life. However, since it survived the attack from Wu Fa, it must be strong enough to defeat any Dao Origin Stage cultivators in the realm!

"Take this." Ye Xiao took out the needle and cut off the rotten meat around the lump. He applied some medical materials on the wound and took out a supreme Detoxication Dan bead. He thought for a while and then took out one more, and then put them both into the hawk's mouth.

The hawk swallowed the supreme dan beads much faster than swallowing the blood beads.

It absolutely could tell what was better by smelling it. The supreme dan beads were making marvelous qi. How could it just stare at it!

[This is something given by heavens to me to ease my pain!] The hawk was shouting excitedly in the heart.

After it took the dan beads, it fell asleep fast.

It tilted its head and then fell asleep in the hot water. If Ye Xiao didn't hold it a little bit, it would very likely drown in the hot water!

Ye Xiao carried up the hawk and got out the water.

Erhuo meowed. It was so overjoyed. As a human being, Ye Xiao was tall. However, as he was carrying the hawk... it was like a frog carrying a swan... That was it.

It was a hilarious scene. Erhuo felt so satisfied that it could see such a funny picture in its life.

It started to snow again. Ye Xiao was wearing only tattered clothes. That was awkward. After bathing in the hot water, he hurriedly took out a robe from inside the Space. He even held Erhuo in his arms.

Erhuo was moved. It meowed and then cuddled Ye Xiao with happiness.

[My master is the best. He cares for me...]

[I don't feel cold, but I can't turn it down. He is being kind to me. Besides, the feeling of being cared and concerned for is so exclusive and comfy...]

After a while, Erhuo realized... Ye Xiao held it in his arms, not because he wanted to warm Erhuo, but he wanted to be warmed... He felt cold!

It was like holding a heater in the arms to hold Erhuo in arms... That was better than wearing a cotton-padded jacket...

Erhuo was extremely upset. [Meow... That's so sad. I thought he cared for me. It turns out he just treats me like a hot-water bag... That truly makes me look stupid and low-class...]

It had all rights to have such a feeling though. Ye Xiao was too much. He didn't just hold it. In fact, he kept moving it to wherever he felt cold on his body...

He put it near the chest first. When he felt warm there, he put it on the neck. When he felt warm on the neck, he put it on the back... In the end, he just held it between his two legs... He was only wearing a robe. Nothing else... Erhuo was awkwardly too close to his private something...

Erhuo had shouted to protest, but it didn't work. Ye Xiao ignored it.

Finally, when Ye Xiao was going to move Erhuo to warm his butt, Erhuo raged up in fury.

[Fxck! This is humiliating a divine beast!]

[You want to warm your hands, your chest, fine! You actually used me to warm your private part and even want to use me on your butt...] Erhuo fast disappeared. - Shoot! - It quit!

It was back to the Boundless Space...

Ye Xiao humped. He just wanted to grab it out from the Space and put it on his butt, but something happened on the hawk. - Bang! - The hawk emitted a huge wave of rolling qi, which actually broke the snow in the air into pieces.

The next moment, it stretched its iron-like feathers. Its huge body suddenly stood up. It screamed to the sky, which shook the heavens. It kept swinging its wings. It was so excited!

The wound was finally cured! After so many years!

The hawk was showing an aura which was more than twice stronger than earlier!

Ye Xiao didn't see this happening. Suddenly, the snow flew over to him and covered his entire face. He nearly choked. "Easy!"

Ye Xiao shouted.

The hawk hurriedly stopped screaming. It made a few sounds from the throat instead. It walked to Ye Xiao and rubbed him with its head. In its eyes, there was excitement and greasiness.

[You are such a nice man! I knew it... I am lucky to have you here.]

...

What happened next was that Ye Xiao felt like he was racing with clouds.

In fact, he was speeding in the clouds.

The hawk was fully cured, so it directly picked up Ye Xiao and put him on its back. It started to wave its wings and then flew up into the clouds!

Ye Xiao was shocked and scared! He hurriedly held onto the hawk's neck.

Even though he was such a bodacious person, when he looked down from high in the sky, he felt frightened and dizzy in the head.

Suddenly, something moved in his clothes. It was Erhuo. It seemed quite excited too. It grabbed on the hawk's feather on its head and looked down to the ground.

The hawk was speeding up gradually. It stretched out its feathers and kept Ye Xiao on the back steadily. - Shoot! -

...

Ye Xiao looked at the black hole behind the hawk's tail... He was frightened.

[Holy heavens! This is too fast!]

In fact, they were still speeding up.

[Till how fast are you going to stop speeding?]

When Erhuo caught the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, Ye Xiao thought that the cat's speed was the fastest he had ever seen. However, Ye Xiao couldn't tell which was faster between Erhuo and the hawk. Erhuo was fast, but it just moved for one second. The hawk was flying and boosting! It seemed the hawk was doing better than Erhuo in speed!

...

Chapter 935: Tempest-thunder Golden Hawk!

- Hoooh! - Ye Xiao rushed through the clouds on the hawk. The hawk waved its long wings boosting forward. It was getting faster and faster as if there was no limit on its speed. The hawk hadn't moved this fast since it was hurt. Now that it was all cured, it felt so thrilled, so it boosted up in full power to enjoy the pleasure.

The hawk was enjoying it, but Ye Xiao, who was sitting on its back, couldn't last any longer. He kept hiding his head deep inside the feathers behind the wings, only exposing a small part of his back outside the feather. However, it felt like his back was being cut by the wind, as if it was being slashed again and again.

When the hawk finally had enough fun and stopped. Ye Xiao staggeringly got down the back of the hawk. He felt his two legs were powerless. He was feeling dizzy...

"Why did you fly so fast?" Ye Xiao knocked on the hawk's head twice angrily. "If I were any weaker in physical strength and cultivation, I would have died on your back! Do you understand? Are you trying kill your savior?"

Ye Xiao shouted at the hawk. He claimed to be the savior of the hawk. Although it sounded quite close to the truth, he was quite shameless saying that!

The hawk cooed and looked at Ye Xiao with innocence in its eyes. It tilted its head and touched Ye Xiao with its head again. In its voice, there was full of apology.

"Fine. Alright." Ye Xiao couldn't help smiling. "Don't play cute on me. It won't work."

The hawk cooed and then stood up straight. It waved its wings and looked around. [Look! This is my house!]

[This is my home!]

Ye Xiao looked around and was shocked. This place... Somebody must have lived in this place. A hawk could never decorate a place like that.

What he saw was a row of wooden houses in a fancy shape.

From its structure, he knew that the hawk could never be able to build such house. No matter how smart and cognitive the hawk was, it was never able to make these!

In fact, even Ye Xiao himself could not make such an outstanding architecture. Only professionals could do this!

If there was anything that looked absolutely related to the hawk... it must be... the huge nest on the other side!

The hawk was walking to the nest.

That must be its home...

The nest was over a hundred meters wide. That was such a waste. The hawk obviously didn't need that much space!

In the center of the nest, there was a stone. It was dark. There seemed to be some words written on it.

Ye Xiao took a close look and saw the words.

'Man from the sky plays in the world.'

'One sword in the hand. Two hawks are a couple.'

'Conquer the realm, command the world.'

'Invincible in the world, disappear in vain.'

'Forty-eight thousand meters, the peak of the realm!'

Ye Xiao took a deep breath.

[Who the fxck is this guy?]

[What an arrogant prick.]

There were some smaller words after that.

'Pregnant golden hawk; an ascending man. Stay for fifteen years

until the hawk's egg is laid. Tempest-thunder golden hawk, species from the outer world. Only lightnings can make it hatch. The day of birth only depends heaven's will. Life or death, god will plan.'

No signature or anything else in the end.

Just a text without any clue directing the person who wrote it.

Ye Xiao thought for a long time and then suddenly thought of something.

Three thousand years earlier, there was a supreme master cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. He was called Peerless Man. He was like a shooting star, shining in the realm for a short time, splendid but short-lived.

Peerless Man had only showed himself in the martial world for three years.

However, in the three years, he defeated every cultivator in the realm. The recognized No. 1 cultivator at the time was defeated by him with only three moves.

After three years, he just disappeared. Nobody knew where he went.

In the entire Qing-Yun Realm, nobody knew this man's name. However, they all knew that wherever Peerless Man went, there were always two huge golden hawks following him.

Every time when the golden hawks showed up, there would be thunder and wind!

Golden hawks bring tempest-thunder!

There was records about this in the history book in Cold Moon Palace.

It must be that Peerless Man who wrote the words on the rock!

[The great man didn't die after defeating everybody in the realm. He lived on this mountain that nobody knew about.]

[This mountain is forty-eight thousand meters high... It should be the highest mountain in Qing-Yun Realm indeed...]

[The two golden hawks that followed the great man must be Tempest-thunder Golden Hawks. This one here must be their child...]

Ye Xiao thought, [However, something is wrong. The time. It doesn't make sense. The great man lived three thousand years ago. It says he stayed in this place for fifteen years until they laid the egg of the child hawk... Why is this silly hawk just seventeen years old?]

That was so unreasonable.

Ye Xiao couldn't think through it. So he read the latter part of the text again. 'Tempest-thunder golden hawk, species from the outer world. Only lightnings can make it hatch. The day of birth only depends on heaven's will.' He thought for a long time and finally arrived to a somehow ridiculous but in fact quite reasonable conclusion.

That was...

This golden hawk wasn't hatched by the two golden hawks in the old days. After they laid the egg... they put the egg somewhere. In that special place, lightnings would strike on the egg frequently.

It absorbed the power from the lightning. After a long long time, the egg hatched...

If the child hawk was only seventeen years old, then it must have been left in the world for about three thousand years as an egg!

[The hawk was hatched after being stricken by lightnings for three thousand years?]

[Un-freaking-believable...]

Ye Xiao's eyes started to twist.

[That Peerless Man was so reckless. He actually left a golden

hawk egg in the world and that's it? Wouldn't he be afraid that maybe the egg could roll off the cliff or something?]

[What about the weather? What if it was too cold for it to hatch?]

[What if some beast ate it?]

[Okay. It hatched. But what was the baby hawk supposed to eat when it was just hatched? How did it live?]

[He actually didn't care about all these. He just lived his casual and beautiful life and cared about nothing.]

"'Life and death, god will plan'. I see why he wrote this." Ye Xiao looked at the hawk in pity.

[You poor little thing. You don't know you were abandoned, do you?]

[Look at you. I know you want to show me something good about you, but you are showing your poor childhood to me... Do you know that...]

...

Chapter 936: Stars Sword!

In fact, Ye Xiao was ignorant on this. The Tempest-thunder Golden Hawk was a special species in the world. It wasn't hatched by the female hawk. The golden hawk egg would have to get through countless lightning strikes to finally hatch.

If the two golden hawks three thousand years ago stayed with the egg, they could only watch it and do nothing. They just couldn't do anything, except expecting more lightnings would strike on the egg. There was nothing else they could do.

Ye Xiao figured out how the baby hawk survived the brutal world now!

When he was still thinking about it, he heard the hawk scream with a long sound. Suddenly, a lightning bolt struck down like a snake. That was so fast.

The lightning bolt was moving so fast, but the hawk didn't move away. It actually rushed up and faced the lightning in an even faster speed!

- Puff! - The bolt crashed on the hawk. The hawk screamed but it didn't sound painful. Instead, the hawk seemed so happy about it. The feathers on its body suddenly became brighter somehow.

The bolts didn't slow down because of that. More and more thunderbolts struck the hawk. The hawk kept flying around to catch the bolts. Countless bolts hit it, but it didn't hurt it a bit. The hawk acted like having a great feast. It was getting more and more spirited after absorbing more and more power from the bolts.

"I see. What a marvelous creature. It actually eats thunderbolts. The fiercest thing in the world turns out to be its food..." Ye Xiao looked at the hawk in the sky and murmured, "I guess it doesn't only use the coldness to suppress the needle from Wu Fa. Maybe the thunder worked a bigger role in it..."

After a while, the bolts moved far.

The hawk had just finished a feast. It walked over to Ye Xiao and cooed. 'Sorry. I forgot to share with you guys. I was just so enjoying that. Next time I will bring you some!'

Erhuo stayed on the shoulder of Ye Xiao and turned its back to the hawk disdainfully and meowed indifferently.

[Pah. Big deal! When my blood completely wakes up, I will make a true enormous feast to open your stupid eyes...]

The hawk was so innocent. It thought Erhuo was being humble to turn over. The hawk was so happy and it just couldn't stop shouting and waving its wings.

Ye Xiao walked into the wooden houses immediately.

This place had been stricken by thunderbolts so frequently, but the wooden houses remained standing tall. These must be something extraordinary.

Ye Xiao touched the wood and it was hard like steel. Besides, it smelled so good, as if it could refresh his mind. Ye Xiao took out a sword from the Space and struck on the wood.

- Sinh... -

It only made a slight sound... Ye Xiao was stunned.

The sword only got into the wood one inch deep. He couldn't cut any deeper.

Ye Xiao had never seen such a tough wood ever.

He was in low cultivation level, level four of Dream Origin Stage, but he was strong enough to cut through a piece of wood. If he wanted to cut an iron board apart with the precious sword that was made by the Space with some special metals, that iron board would be cut through as if he was cutting a pile of mud. However...

Ye Xiao touched the wood and confirmed that it was a material that he had never seen before.

It was light and solid.

After fighting against his own greediness, he decided to give up tearing the houses down. These houses were made by some historical figure thousands of years before. He should let them stay the same... Besides, he truly didn't know what he could do with such a thing.

He couldn't just make them into a cudgel as a weapon, could he?

The hawk was walking after him, with an attitude of 'I am the owner! This is my place!' Ye Xiao picked up something and it would make a long 'talk' to introduce it...

The hawk kept talking. Ye Xiao just did what he was doing as if the hawk wasn't there. That's harmony!

Erhuo rolled up its eyes disdainfully. It truly felt unpleasant to see the hawk like this. [What the hell are you shouting for? Do you think he can understand you? Do you think you are me?]

[Stupid bird!] Erhuo wasn't being polite in its heart.

Eventually, the hawk had introduced everything in its home. Ye Xiao left the house, but the hawk didn't follow. After staying in the house, the hawk slowly walked out. In its mouth, there was a sword and a book.

It walked to Ye Xiao and cooed, waving its wings. It seemed very happy and excited.

"What is this?" Ye Xiao picked up a sword that was quite heavy. The sword must be at least fifty kilograms. It seemed very light but turned out to be so heavy.

One should never judge a person by the appearance, and not judge a sword with its appearance!

- Clang! -

Ye Xiao drew out the sword and a stream of bright blue light shined up. A sword in his hand shined with a strong glow that

brightened the world.

The sword wasn't moved, yet the blue glow on the blade was rolling like water in the sea.

"Nice sword!"

Ye Xiao commended.

On the handle of the sword, there was a word, Stars.

Ye Xiao turned over the sword and the blue lights shined even brighter. There were some star lights glowing among the blue light. Splendid!

"So that's why it says stars..." Ye Xiao took a deep breath and used the sword he took out from the Space to clash with the Stars Sword.

- Clang... -

That was a small sound. Ye Xiao felt less weight in the hand. The precious sword only had half of it left in his hand. The other half was cut off by the Stars Sword!

It was more like cutting a piece of paper... The sword just broke. There was barely sound of metals cracking.

[This is...]

Ye Xiao's eyeballs nearly popped out of the eye frames. [How sharp is this sword?]

He was sure he didn't particularly strengthen any side. The sword he took out from the Space was something special and valuable. It was made from the metal essence from the Gold Space. That should be something extraordinary!

However, under the strike of the divine Stars Sword, it was so weak and broken so easily!

Ye Xiao truly liked this Stars Sword! He decided to be shameless on this, so he asked, "I guess I should take it as a gift from you?"

...

Chapter 937: Fully Loaded; Goodbye!

The hawk nodded and waved its wings up and down. It picked up the book with its beak and held it in front of Ye Xiao, as if it had completed some super difficult mission. It was shouting to the sky with pleasure.

Ye Xiao opened the book and there were four words, Sword Art of Stars.

He had just glanced at it, and then the book suddenly turned into a stream of light that entered his head. After that, Ye Xiao suddenly felt a man holding a sword standing in his spiritual mind. That sword was emitting blue lights, the Stars Sword.

The man held the sword in the hand, staring at the point of the sword, and he blandly spoke, "I created the Sword Art of Stars. I want this technique to be like stars shining upon the sky. One sword move could bring peace to the world. One sword move could astonish the devils. One sword move could change the space!"

"Move No. 1. With the ambition to reach the clouds, to swing the sword and touch the stars!"

The sword slowly moved. It seemed it wanted Ye Xiao to see clearly, so it made the move slowly.

As the sword moved, Ye Xiao was obsessed. He just stood there and couldn't move.

It had been a long time and the first move was finally done...

Ye Xiao woke up and felt his face in great pain before he opened the eyes.

He realized that somebody was slapping him!

[Holy heavens! I have never been humiliated like this ever! This is not going to end easily! I am going to kill whoever slaps me! I swear!]

As he opened his eyes, he saw Erhuo sitting before him and kept slapping him with its two cute paws!

Ye Xiao wasn't angry anymore. He couldn't... After a while, he shouted angrily, "You little bastard! Are you going to get me killed?"

He grabbed Erhuo and beat it on the head.

He didn't beat it with real power, but it contained all his anger. That made it quite hurtful. Erhuo took a roll after being beaten. It actually shouted in grief. There was even a tear in its big round eyes.

Ye Xiao huffed, "You slapped me! How could you do that to your master? You are a pet! And you feel wronged now?"

Erhuo shouted in anger and grief, making gestures. Ye Xiao finally understood it. He had been standing there lost in the spiritual mind for three whole days, just because of that sword move!

Erhuo couldn't wake him. He just stood there and didn't move a bit. Erhuo was nervous and worried. It was afraid something terrible happened to its master. That was why it decided to slap on his face eventually... However, when it just slapped him a few times, Ye Xiao woke up... That was unfortunate...

It did it for a good purpose, but it was still caught slapping its master...

"I see..." Ye Xiao hurriedly held Erhuo in arms. "Alright. It's my fault. Come on. Put it together. You are the peerless spiritual beast in the universe. Stop being a weak crybaby... That's so disgraceful..."

Erhuo didn't stop accusing him though. [You stupid master. You wronged me badly! Meow... I was being nice to you. I concerned about you. Yet you thought I was doing something bad. You actually beat me so hard. Meow... I treat you with all my heart, yet you... I...]

Its great grief seemed to silence the entire world all of a sudden.

Ye Xiao smiled and gradually poured out energy from his hand. He kept touching Erhuo, and after a while, it was calmed down. He was an expert of this trick now. He said, "You are such a silly little thing. Remember, no matter how worried you are, don't slap me... You were simply asking for that beat-up..."

Erhuo stared at him for a while and couldn't say a word to express its gloomy mood.

[I know. Yes. You are making me feel quite comfortable at the moment. But I can't just let go of this...]

[This is... That...]

The hawk walked over to them and looked at Erhuo with scoff in the eyes. [I told you he was alright. You didn't believe me. You insisted to slap him that hard... What now. You pissed him off...]

Erhuo was angry. [When things are unfortunate for me, anything could come sneer at me. I can't piss my master, but can't I just beat you up instead...]

It then jumped up fast. It was difficult to describe how fast it was. It only left a white shadow while it was moving. Within one second, it was already on the hawk's head. Its two small paws were made into two fists, beating up on the hawk fast and hard.

The hawk exclaimed loudly to beg for forgiveness.

Ye Xiao made a great effort to separate them. However, the two animals were still staring at each other with fury in the eyes.

'Why don't you try to fight me in the sky If you really are that good!' the hawk cooed.

'Don't forget this. One day, I will beat you so hard till you beg for mercy! If not, I will call you my ancestor!' Erhuo gritted its teeth and made a vow. It glared at the hawk and walked away with a waving tail. "Meow..."

The hawk was almost the strongest creature in Qing-Yun Realm. However, when it heard Erhuo's words, it actually felt scared. So it stayed silent!

...

Ye Xiao had stayed on this mountain for seven days.

The last day when it prepared to leave, the hawk truly didn't want him to go. It walked Ye Xiao out to the foot of the mountain but still didn't want to see Ye Xiao leave.

"If you don't want to say goodbye, why don't you just follow me to the martial world." Ye Xiao touched its head.

That was a daily usual act for Ye Xiao now. The hawk finally didn't mind being touched by Ye Xiao anymore. It actually enjoyed it so much. Erhuo was not feeling good about it. [He only touched me with softness and love. Me alone! He now will touch the stupid hawk too. That's insane!]

"Coo coo... coo..." The hawk seemed quite gloomy. It waved the huge head and reached out three feathers on the wing and waved.

"What does that mean? Time? Three days? Three months? Three years? Thirty years? It can't be three hundred years..." Ye Xiao was speechless. He could only make a guess.

Erhuo was impatient, but it still translated it to Ye Xiao. "Meow, meow, meow, meow, meoooowwww..."

It was now the private translator who worked between the hawk and Ye Xiao. Erhuo hated to play such a role, but it was the only way. It had to do it.

Ye Xiao finally understood what the hawk meant. The golden hawks in the old days had left many things for the hawk. It didn't master all of them yet. It was still weak...

It needed three more years to fully grow up.

Before that, it couldn't leave home...

After all, although it was powerful, it couldn't command lightnings to strike on it outside of this area.

That was a skill that concerned its future. It couldn't just leave without accomplishing it.

...

Chapter 938: Cultivation Boost!

Ye Xiao nodded as if he could understand the hawk. "You should go back. I will come back when available. Or maybe you can come see me when you grow up."

The hawk rubbed Ye Xiao's hand with its head. It truly didn't want Ye Xiao to go. It nodded to Erhuo to show its gratitude for being their translator. It stepped back a few steps and then made a long roar. It waved its huge wings and then shot up, disappearing in the sky like a flying arrow.

Erhuo covered its mouth with one paw and giggled gloatingly.

Ye Xiao was confused. He looked at Erhuo. Erhuo put down the paw and acted like nothing had happened just now.

Ye Xiao didn't know that Erhuo actually didn't truly tell Ye Xiao what the hawk had said. It just translated a part of it.

The hawk reached out three feathers and waved, because it wanted to tell Ye Xiao it would be fully prepared after three months.

However, Erhuo made it three years when it told Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao had no idea what the cunning cat did. He couldn't understand any hawk language at all. He thought Erhuo was doing a good job... In fact, it never did.

It was better to offend a gentleman than a bigot. In fact, it was better to offend a bigot than Erhuo!

[Meow... Humph. This stupid bird is truly something. It is a special beast which is not included in the thirteen spirits. If it followed us earlier, the stuff in the Space would not be mine alone... I have to make use of the things in the Space as many as I can during the coming days. Every day matters. Translation could be wrong sometimes. At least it is never perfectly accurate...] Erhuo rolled its eyes up and sat still on Ye Xiao's shoulder. It was

making one vile plan after another...

Ye Xiao walked down from the mountain and looked at the green forest. He felt like in dreams.

What happened to him was like an amazing dream.

No. Several strange but incredible dreams!

When he thought deeper in it, he realized the Sky Soul Mountain was all green with lives. There were plants everywhere.

When he fell off the Sky Soul Precipice, he fell to a place where there was filled with dead bodies. After that, he found a tunnel which connected to a snow ice world...

It confused Ye Xiao.

He felt like...

Those were different worlds! He had been travelled among different worlds!

That cold ice world... He had been to Sky Soul Mountain for many times. He had never noticed any ice and snow around that mountain.

He just couldn't stop feeling strange about it, so he went to the top of Sky Soul Mountain in the same route. He jumped over the cliff and got to the opposite side. Then he looked around... but what he saw confused him more.

[Where is the snow?]

[Where is the ice?]

[There is nothing out there!]

What he could see were all normal images. That was absolutely a different world than that ice snow mountain!

What was going on?

He saw the snow mountain, saw Li Wuliang, saw the hawk... Was it just a dream?

Ye Xiao couldn't stop thinking this way. After a long time, he finally came up with a possible guess.

That was...

He walked down the Sky Soul Mountain and called Darky. He rode on Darky and thought about that question... At this moment, he found...

Somebody was shouting from thousands of meters away. It sounded weak, but he could hear it... He could even hear weapons clank, but it just sounded for seconds.

When he realized it and tried to hear it clearer, he couldn't hear it anymore.

Ye Xiao recalled the feeling a while earlier. He was shocked.

[Thousands of meters away? How is that possible?] He stared at his hand.

"Before this, although I am better in spiritual sensitivity than before, I could only hear the sound from hundreds of meters away. I even need to focus so hard. How come I just heard something from thousands of meters away while I wasn't even paying attention to it? That was not my imagination!"

That was about three thousand meters away.

It was a weak sound from further than three thousand meters away...

Ye Xiao was shocked. He hurriedly rode Darky to it.

He wanted to confirm it.

He wanted to check if there was such a sound thousands of meters away.

Unexpectedly, within a blink, the spiritual qi inside his body started to rise and roll up from deep in the dantian. Suddenly, it had already run inside his body for a few rounds. During this time, Darky barely felt its master on the back at all...

Ye Xiao was stunned by that.

That's right. He realized he was in an imponderable status. More than that...

He could move up to the clouds within a breath. He could rush up to the stars with a jump. He was weightless as if he was not real, like he was a god!

Only people above level seven of Dream Origin Stage could be like that. Before he got to Sky Soul Mountain, he was only level five of Dream Origin Stage. Did he just upgrade two levels?

He had been trying not to improve fast!

He didn't even feel it when he broke through twice...

It happened all of a sudden, without any trace, leaving him no feelings! It was just so weird!

It was so strange!

What happened to him was marvelous and amazing!

East-rising Purple Qi was activated instantly and its power ran over his body. He was covered by purple qi. To look at him from a distance, he was like a conqueror of the universe, looking down upon the world!

With the great purple qi, there came a conquerer!

He had reached the top of Purple Qi Descends, the second level of East-rising Purple Qi!

That was perfection of Purple Qi Descends!

One step ahead, he would reach the third level of East-rising Purple Qi.

Ye Xiao was totally shocked.

[What... What is going on?]

[It is good to improve in cultivation... But... I... I don't want to upgrade so fast.]

Erhuo was in his clothes. It reached out half of its head, rolling its eyes, waving its tail and then got back in. He meowed and in its voice, there was gloating.

"Erhuo, speak! What is going on?" Ye Xiao grabbed Erhuo out.

"Meow, meow... meow, meow, meow... Meow, meow, meow, meow..." Erhuo didn't hesitate. It immediately talked and made postures.

"So, because I have been suppressing the power inside me, during the past few days, it suddenly erupted? So I was boosted up to higher levels?"

"Meow!"

...

Chapter 939: Shadowless Assassin!

"You mean... The soul power that I absorbed down there has been boosting my cultivation?"

"Meow."

"The power in that Ghost Ganoderma that you pulled out from Li Wuliang's body has been digested in the Space?"

"Meow."

"When I was running from the hawk and bursting in speed with my life energy, it didn't actually hurt me, but only activated all the energy I suppressed inside me?"

"Meow..."

"Well... The ganoderma can make Li Wuliang invincible in the realm in ten years... How about me? What am I now?"

"Meow..."

"East-rising Purple Qi requires a much higher power level from me, so I am weakened by it... Otherwise, I can be much stronger... However, it is better this way!"

...

Ye Xiao asked Erhuo for a long time. Erhuo was quite excited at the beginning, but then it was unanimated. However, it gave him all the answers. When Ye Xiao asked more questions, Erhuo felt embarrassed even more...

[I feel like being humiliated. What you asked are certain things! Why do you have to ask me every detail... Do you really have to...]

After a long series of questions, Ye Xiao finally understood it.

When the hawk was chasing him, he felt threatened, so he got himself over-loaded to run beyond his limitation. He thought he would get hurt because of it, however, because he had accumulated

so much energy recently, not to mention he had the marvelous soul power and the power in the ganoderma inside him, he didn't hurt himself with that over-loaded situation. In fact, that eruption activated the power inside him... and eventually changed him a great deal...

Besides, he learned the Sword Art of Stars. It was only one move, but it successfully enhanced his cultivation, so that he had a much stronger power to activate the true force of the swordplay...

To fully unleash the power of the sword and the sword art, Ye Xiao needed to operate all his cultivation power.

He had been suppressing himself in order to make himself stay in the same level. However, during the three days when he was learning the Sword Art of Stars, he released it unknowingly...

First, he made an eruption of his power to reach his own limitation, and then he released the power that had been restrained inside him while learning the sword art. That was how it happened. It happened when he was lost in the spiritual mind space, so he didn't feel it at all, even though that was such a great boost...

It was hard to believe, but it was reasonable!

The biggest reason for this was that he had accumulated too much power in the earlier days. Since he got through the special training, and also after those fights, he was enlightened on the edge of life and death, and then... the soul power from the old heroes, the ganoderma... the golden hawk... the highest mountain in the realm...

When he was on that ice mountain, he was somehow pushed up two levels by that place. That place was far from the martial world and filled with spiritual atmosphere... He couldn't automatically break through in cultivation yet, but that place really did help him in a certain way...

What stopped the upgrading was the limitation of the energy in Ye Xiao. He had run out of the energy he had been accumulating.

The Boundless Space was full of energy, but the energy in Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai was all used. He had to collect more before doing another upgrade...

"Holy heavens. This is eye-opening truly! I actually got upgraded?" Ye Xiao felt it quite unbelievable.

[Forget it. In these days, there have been too many unbelievable things that happened to me. I think I should give up digging on it!]

...

He basically had figured out how he was upgraded so greatly. However, the question about the golden hawk was still in his heart. When he realized it, they were already on the road.

Suddenly, a vicious voice sounded, "Where do you want to go? Why run so fast? Humph! You have killed so many people of ours. I guess you should stop now, shouldn't you?"

A weak but indifferent voice answered, "Run? I have never even thought of running away. I am just in a negative moment of my life as though a tiger has come down to the plain. You small people are just taking advantage of me by luck. If I have at least ten percent of my energy remaining, do you think you would ever have this chance to talk to me like this?"

He was definitely a desperate person who was currently in an extremely difficult situation. He sounded so weak, but still talked arrogantly.

He talked just like a high-standing man talking to an ant.

Ye Xiao shook his head. [Well, dude, if you are still as powerful as you want to be, it may still be okay to talk like that. But... You are not even ten percent as powerful as you should be... Aren't you asking for humiliation speaking like that?]

As he expected.

"B*llshit!" The vicious voice sounded again. - Pah! - He slapped on the other man.

"Pah! Yes, I see. The best weapon you have is your stinky mouth! I don't care how powerful you used to be. You are now in my hands. You are my prisoner! Talk like that one more time and I will torture you with everything I can think of! I may play you to death! So what? Do you think you can do something about it?"

That indifferent voice sounded again. The man humped and spoke disdainfully, "Since I stepped out the Northern Lands, I never thought of going back alive. There is still regret in my heart, but I guess this is my fate. I think I should just let it go and stop being regretful anymore. However, there is one thing I truly can't forgive myself about. I actually got myself captured by a bunch of stupid animals. That's out of my expectation really! I guess there is no justice anymore. People like you actually can still live like normal."

That vicious voice sounded again. He gloated and spoke vigorously, "Shadowless Assassin, hahaha... I never knew there would actually be one day, that I, Pu Feitian, could actually rise in the world. All I need to do is to take you back to the sect. The leadership will definitely reward me with much more resources... Hahaha..."

The weak and indifferent voice spoke disdainfully, "Well, congratulations."

Pu Feitian laughed and said, "Do you think it is too late to flatter me now? You have been making troubles for us for about one year, Shadowless Assassin. We are three factions, yet none of us was able to know your true identity. Now, let me have a look. I wonder what your face looks like, Shadowless Assassin."

The indifferent voice answered blandly, "Pu Feitian, you are a disciple of the three factions. You should know that it is worse to

humiliate a man than killing him!"

Pu Feitian laughed and said, "What? You mean I can humiliate you? Well, just so you know. I have three hobbies in my life. One of them is to humiliate. Do you understand? I like to humiliate people! What I like the most is to capture a chaste virgin, rape her and make her a sluttish whore. That makes me feel successful! That is the most pleasant thing to do in the world!"

"The second is to humiliate powerful cultivators just like you, a strong figure I can only look up to in my life!" He spoke fiercely, "To beat up a super powerful cultivator who should be standing high beyond the clouds and humiliate him as I like... Oh, relax. I won't do that to you, will I? No. I will leave the powerful man to the most indecent hooligans. They will curse him, beat him, spit on him, torture him... I just love to see how they humiliate him! Do you understand?"

...

Chapter 940: One Sword Move; Problem Solved!

The indifferent voice sounded again, "That is why you, Bu Tianfei, never have a chance to truly rise up in Saint Sunlight Sect. They always hate you and look down upon you. You are and will always be a useless figure. You know what. You don't have a heart of admiration for strength. You don't understand the pride of a powerful man! No matter how long you can live, you are just a human-shaped dross!"

Bu Tianfei's voice sounded sharply, "You know nothing! I do that because I know about powerful people! You know nothing about that joy and pleasure! You know nothing about the feeling of controlling everything, ruling everything... That fascinating feeling... You never will understand unless you try it for once!"

"I love to put down the high-standing powerful man down to the mug in the ground and humiliate him like a slave. I love to do anything I want on him! It feels so good!"

Bu Tianfei laughed.

"That is the propulsion of me. I want to have that pleasure, so I work so hard to become stronger! Otherwise, why should I? A man should only obey his true heart in the world. We live for what we feel good! Don't we? I guess I should stop teaching you now. You are in my hands no matter what you say. I get to do whatever I want on you!"

"Shadowless Assassin, with your sword in hand, you could kill whoever you want. You should be such a powerful figure in the realm, a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. However, now you are in my hands, what do you think you can do? You can only accept whatever I arrange for you. When a high-standing powerful figure fell to the bottom of hell, he totally becomes a toy. Truth has proved me right! Hahahaha..."

Then he took out a bottle of liquid, smiled wickedly, and said, "Alright. Enough talking. I should really go check your real face now! I am sure this will bring me more rewards in the sect!"

The man on the ground made a long sigh and closed his eyes. He couldn't do anything.

He was powerless now. He didn't even have a bit energy. He could easily kill those men with a slap in ordinary days, but now he could only let them do whatever they want.

They were like butchers and he was like a piece of meat.

He could only accept it as his fate and let the useless scourings become in power!

[It won't be worse than just death. There are over a thousand men who died under my sword this year. It's worth it...] He thought, [However, I haven't torn the three factions down yet. What a regret in my life...]

[I can't avenge Brother Ye... What a regret in life!]

[Fine... What's left of me is nothing but a walking flesh. I guess I should just let his life end.]

He quietly closed his eyes.

That liquid was about to drop on his face.

The liquid was not so special. Its only efficacy was to remove all disguise of a person!

He couldn't stop it anymore.

On his face, he felt something chilling... Suddenly, a voice sounded, "Bu Tianfei!"

That was a cold and loud shout.

When the voice was still resounding, an enormous bright sword light suddenly descended like a shooting star from the outerworld.

Bu Tianfei hadn't stopped laughing yet, but he always felt the

fatal danger getting closer to him. He felt like being aimed at by an ancient giant beast. He felt scared and started to sweat.

He exclaimed. When he was about to get away, he was suddenly enlightened. [It must be somebody who wants to save Shadowless Assassin! That means I can use him to protect my life!]

He forcibly turned around and grabbed the man on the ground.

That was a good plan, but reality was cruel for him. The man who came to attack surely knew Bu Tianfei would do this. That sword light wasn't just scarring him. It was actually aiming at the place around Shadowless Assassin!

- Puff! -

The splendid sword light shined and approached fast. Blood splashed.

Bu Tianfei's right hand had been cut off!

At the same time, somebody kicked on his chest hard. He was kicked out dozens of meters away and then crashed on a big tree.

A slim figure showed up between Bu Tianfei and Shadowless Assassin.

That was exactly Ye Xiao.

Shadowless Assassin, who had been powerless and exhausted, suddenly had a sense of security. He looked at the back of Ye Xiao and said, "Who are you, my friend?"

Ye Xiao's long sword was shaking in his hand. That was Stars Sword.

He made that sword strike under the guidance of Sword Art of Stars. It turned out to be rather powerful!

In his eyes, there was killing intent! He glared at Bu Tianfei, who was covered by blood. He walked over to Bu Tianfei step by step.

Bu Tianfei was only level six of Dream Origin Stage. For Ye Xiao,

he was weak. In fact, even level nine of Dream Origin Stage cultivator couldn't defeat Ye Xiao now.

The aura of strength on Ye Xiao was powerful enough to freeze Bu Tianfei!

"Bingxue, how do you want this guy to die? How about we cut him into pieces? Or should we disable him and throw him to the beasts?" Ye Xiao asked gently, without turning around.

Shadowless Assassin was stunned.

[Bingxue?]

[He knows my name!]

[He didn't even look at me, but he knows who I am? He knows my real identity!]

[Who is he?]

His heart was full of questions, but he was finally calmed down. He faintly smiled and said, "To cut him into pieces or to make him the animals' food are both too much merciful for him. Seize him! Let me deal with him!"

In his eyes, there was some frightening glow.

He had been traveling the world and never ever been treated like that!

How could he let such small figures humiliate him like that and then just die in an easy way...

He definitely would take revenge!

"Good!"

Ye Xiao moved away with his long cyan robe fluttering in the air.

Bu Tianfei was exclaiming because of the pain. He actually lost one hand all of a sudden.

[Where the fxck did that powerful man come from?]

[One sword strike? And I couldn't even draw out my sword to fight?]

[Isn't Shadowless Assassin always on his own? He has been fighting the three factions on his own, hasn't he? How come...]

When he was feeling confused, the sword light shined again. Ye Xiao had arrived over his head.

...

Chapter 941: Break Out

Bu Tianfei exclaimed and then moved aside fast in an awkward way. He shouted, "Who are you? How dare you put your hands in other's business! Do you know who he is? What you are doing will make you an enemy to the three factions... You will be our sworn enemy... Stop! Have you lost your mind! Stop... Please... It's a mistake... Mistake..."

"Mistake..."

Ye Xiao waved the sword before his eyes as he smiled in a vicious way. Ye Xiao casually asked, "Is this really a mistake? What mistake?"

"My... My friend... Listen to me... You don't know what is going on. Look. You hurt me just now, but I guess you didn't know the truth. I won't blame you!"

Bu Tianfei's skinny face was covered by tears and snot. He looked quite scared. "My friend... There is something you need to know... I am a disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect. That man is our sworn enemy! I kindly suggest that you don't lay your hands into this business. I am an important disciple... Look, I am a generous man. I won't blame you for what you just did..."

He was talking incoherently, repeatedly telling Ye Xiao how important he was for the great sect and how generous he was, so as to make Ye Xiao give up the idea of killing him. He actually felt quite regretful though.

[Why would I do this alone? I sent the others away when I realized Shadowless Assassin was powerless, so that I can get all the credits of this and enjoy torturing a powerful figure...]

Shame on him. He was now in a helpless situation.

"Disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect? Important disciple? Oh. That must be quite noble. So you are going to forgive me for what I did

to you, aren't you? Really? I have cut off your hand..." Ye Xiao frowned.

Bu Tianfei thought that there was an opportunity to survive this. He hurriedly added, "Don't worry, my friend. A hand means nothing to me. In our sect, the great sect, there are plenty of ways to put the hand back on me. You and I, we don't have any serious problem. If you help me this time, you will always be my friend in my heart. Our sect will see you as a friend. Give our enemy to us is a big credit.

"Besides, whenever you come to our sect, Saint Sunlight Sect, you will be the most honorable guest!"

Ye Xiao answered while rubbing his lower jaw, "Really? You don't hate me? After I cut off your hand, you are still so nice to me?"

[No? As long as I can return to the sect, I will show you what the real taste of pain is! I swear! I will make you exclaim for seven full days! I will make you beg for death!]

[I will let you know what it means to beg for death! I will make you regret being born to the world.]

Bu Tianfei could only think fiercely in the heart. On his face which was covered by blood, he was showing an expression of kindness. He praised, "No! I swear! I won't hate you! You are just like a good friend of mine when I saw you for the first time. I won't be mad even if you cut off two hands of mine!"

Ye Xiao nodded and then suddenly slapped Bu Tianfei hard. He blandly spoke, "The first time? I would rather die than become a friend of yours! You won't blame me. Fine. I don't care. I am definitely blaming you!"

"Swear? Really? Do you think your words mean anything?"

- Pah! -

Bu Tianfei had just found hope in his heart, so he wasn't prepared in face of the sudden attack. That hard slap was right on

his face. He suddenly felt dizzy. A full sky of stars showed in his sight...

He was stricken out...

Ye Xiao rushed over to catch him and stamped hard on his leg. - Crack! - Bu Tianfei made a monster-like exclamation as he trembled for a second and then passed out.

HIs leg was broken!

Ye Xiao coldly said, "Two hands huh? What about two legs? Maybe you won't blame me on this too!"

He then grabbed Bu Tianfei, who was in a coma. He carried him back to where Shadowless Assassin stayed, like carrying a tattered bag. Shadowless Assassin looked at him in confusion. Ye Xiao said, "This is not a good place to talk. You need to be cleaned and cured. Come with me."

He put a dan bead into Shadowless Assassin's mouth. - Pa! Pa! Pa! - He tapped on Shadowless Assassin's back on several spots to help him digest the dan bead.

That was skillful. Shadowless Assassin knew about what Ye Xiao did very well. He knew Ye Xiao was being nice to him. However, even though Ye Xiao was skillful, he didn't have enough time and cultivation power, so the dan bead wasn't completely digested yet!

There were sounds of people coming from distance. People shouted in confusion, "I heard an exclamation out there..."

Sounds of clothes flicking the air came from everywhere.

People of Saint Sunlight Sect were coming over from all direction.

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He held up Shadowless Assassin and then ran into the forest fast. He was carrying two men now, but when he dashed, he dashed as far as seven meters. While he was moving, he was moving higher and higher. After a while, he was already

moving on the trees. And then he made a long shout.

Before he stopped, the sound of horse steps was rumbling from distance. Ye Xiao dashed forward to where the horse steps sounded like a shooting arrow.

Darky was moving in the forest like a shooting arrow. Ye Xiao jumped over and landed on its back accurately. They didn't slow down a bit. Ye Xiao on the horse moved forward and disappeared fast.

After a while, some people showed up. They were wearing blue robes. They checked the ground and somebody said, "We heard the sound here... Bu Tianfei should be searching for the enemy in this place. How come we can't find him anymore? Was he ambushed by the enemy?"

"Blood! There is blood here!" somebody shouted.

Soon after that, they found Bu Tianfei's hand.

"This is Bu Tianfei's hand. I can recognize the scars on the hand. Look at the bones. Its bigger than normal people. I am certain..."

"Bu Tianfei's hand got cut off... It seems he has encountered an ambush here... But where is he?"

"That long shout... Was it a demonstration..."

"Whoever did this must be powerful. They disappeared in such a short time, leaving no traces behind..."

"No matter what, we should go get them!"

"There are horse steps sounding over there..."

"Move! Quick!"

...

Ye Xiao rode on Darky's back, running so fast like a windstorm. Before the men from the Saint Sunlight Sect could surround him, he had broken out like a wild windstorm and disappeared in the

forest and mountains.

...

Chapter 942: Who Are You?

While they were on the way, Ye Xiao put a few more dan beads into Shadowless Assassin's mouth. While they were riding fast on Darky, he kept pushing Shadowless Assassin on the back to pour energy into him and help him digest the dan beads.

However, that truly caused big trouble for Shadowless Assassin... They were riding the horse. Darky was running quite reposefully, but for a man who was in fatal illness, that was still too bumpy.

He knew he had to endure it though.

If they stopped to do the treatment, they might be caught by the enemies. That would get them killed.

He was a little recovered at the moment. He operated his own martial art and glanced at Ye Xiao secretly. He couldn't help thinking, [Who is this man?]

[He saved me. His fought decisively. No hesitation. He kills like chopping vegetable. When he decided to leave, he just did it without any hesitation. He must be an experienced cultivator in the martial world!]

[Enemies came from everywhere, yet he made a long shout to call his horse. The path he chose was the only way that could lead us to survival! Every decision was right.]

[He must be extremely calm. His mind power must be strong. He did things barely with any hesitation.]

[He is a sophisticate in martial world!]

[He has been hunted for a long time. That was why he was so experienced and wise.]

[But... why is he so young?]

[According to his cultivation power, he shouldn't be any older. But... It just feels strange. It doesn't seem... logical!]

[He called my name at the beginning. He should be somebody who knows me very well. A friend of mine.]

[However... I don't recognize him. I don't even have an image of him. I am sure he isn't disguised. I am an expert of disguise!]

[Who is he?]

He was sure he had never told anybody about his real identity since he disguised as Shadowless Assassin. Nobody, not even his best friend, knew about this secret.

He just couldn't understand why this young man recognized him the in the first sight!

His heart was filled with countless questions at the moment.

Darky was running so fast carrying them. Suddenly, it took a turn and entered a valley.

Ye Xiao carried the two men and jumped up, flying into the valley. Darky was still running as if nobody had gotten off its back. It kept running over the entrance of the valley.

Within seconds, it was gone.

Nobody knew where it went.

Ye Xiao and Shadowless Assassin had disappeared in the bushes.

There was a hill with a depression.

Ye Xiao happened to land in the depression. He put down Shadowless Assassin and then threw Bu Tianfei to the ground.

- Pah! -

Bu Tianfei had lost one hand and his two legs were smashed. He hit the floor hard. He was in a coma, but the extreme pain woke him up. He didn't have time to exclaim because Ye Xiao covered his mouth fiercely before he did. He just made a silent shout in the mouth and then passed out again.

Ye Xiao calmed down and listened carefully.

After a while, sounds of clothes flicking the air sounded and disappeared at the entrance of the valley.

"Over there! Quick!"

"That is such a fast horse!"

"Tell me about it. Otherwise, how could he escape us?"

"No matter how fast the horse is, it won't last forever. All we need to do is to catch up with the horse!"

"Yes!"

"Let's go!"

...

"May I ask who are you? I know I shouldn't ask. You saved my life. I can't stop thinking about it... Nobody knows my true identity... Who are you..."

Shadowless Assassin was so good at killing. He was a master of human body. He knew he was dying and couldn't operate his own martial art himself when Ye Xiao showed up. Ye Xiao was weak in cultivation. Even though he had tried to pour energy into Shadowless Assassin's body, it didn't really work well. However, Ye Xiao kept feeding him supreme dan beads. Every dan bead was marvelous. A raging mass of spiritual qi was bursting inside his dantian. His dantian should be dry and powerless, but now it was energetic. During the time on the horse back, he had been recovered five percent.

That was five percent of the power of a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. Besides, the dan beads hadn't fully released the effect on him yet.

That stunned Shadowless Assassin.

[What are these dan beads?]

[It actually saved me from death, brought me life energy, and recovered my cultivation power!]

Even though he was such a powerful assassin in the realm, he couldn't understand it!

Those were dan beads that were rare in even Qing-Yun Realm!

[Who is he?]

[Is he somebody I know for a long time?]

[I don't recognize him! He is a strange young man to me!]

"Who am I... I guess it is a long story..." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and said, "Let's focus on your treatment first. What did you do? Why did you make such a disturbance? I am afraid there are lots of people who want to kill you out there... If you don't get yourself better soon, I am afraid we both are going to be in danger. The better you become, the bigger the chance we will survive."

Shadowless Assassin stayed silent for a while and then he said, "I get it."

He stopped talking anymore. He sat in meditation and operated his martial art. Suddenly, tiny streams of spiritual qi started to gather over him from the world.

Ye Xiao moved and got to the entrance of the valley. He was alerted. At the same time, he spread out his spiritual mind force.

Darky had been running so fast earlier. They had run over ten miles already. Ye Xiao had discovered about six group of enemies on the way. They were all searching for somebody. Ye Xiao got a pair of sharp eyes. He was sure they were from the three factions. They were indeed in a great danger. There were still other groups enemies who hadn't shown themselves yet.

Some of them had run after Darky passed the entrance of the valley.

There should be several hundred people of the three factions who were out to hunt Shadowless Assassin.

After the time of a meal, Shadowless Assassin suddenly stood up

and blandly said, "Thanks for the dan beads. I am fifty percent recovered. It should be enough to survive this."

...

Chapter 943: Han Bingxue!

Ye Xiao nodded. Shadowless Assassin was seriously injured. He had even run out of energy. He was totally exhausted. The dan beads Ye Xiao fed him with could only benefit him this far. Shadowless Assassin had a powerful cultivation foundation. Otherwise, he wouldn't recover so well.

To be fully recovered, it all depended on his own effort afterwards.

Shadowless Assassin in fifty percent power was already quite terrible. He stood up and looked at Bu Tianfei, who was in a coma. Slowly and slowly, there was a wicked and vicious smile that showed up on his assassin's face. That was scary.

Ye Xiao wasn't scared, but he made a sigh.

[As usual, you still love retaliation this much. Bu Tianfei is going to get through something real nasty!]

However, things didn't go as Ye Xiao expected. The next moment, Shadowless Assassin drew out his sword and directly stabbed in Bu Tianfei's heart. Bu Tianfei died right away, without feeling any pain. He was gone in peace.

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao was surprised. He looked at the assassin and asked, "Why?"

Shadowless Assassin smiled and said, "I do hate this man... But... I don't think it is worth my effort to torture him. I guess I should just kill him."

Ye Xiao was showing a big smile. "Well, this... is not your style."

Shadowless Assassin stared at Ye Xiao. "It seems you know me rather well. You even know what I would do. You even predicted my next move. I just can't think of your name. You said it wasn't a good time to ask, but what about now? It's the same question. Who are you?"

Ye Xiao smiled gently. "I do know you quite well. You are such a powerful cultivator. How come you ended up in this miserable situation? You shouldn't be!"

He tried to change the topic.

Shadowless Assassin stared at Ye Xiao. He knew Ye Xiao didn't want to tell him the truth, so he stopped asking. He humphed and said, "I fell into their trap this time. That was my mistake..."

Then he told Ye Xiao everything about it. Ye Xiao finally got to know the truth.

Han Bingxue had been wandering around the territory of the three factions, appearing as Shadowless Assassin. He would seize every chance to kill people in the three factions.

He was quite a strong cultivator, besides, he was doing this secretly, so he always succeeded.

This time, he had known there were several men from Saint Sunlight Sect who would go on a secret mission, so he hid around in advance, waiting for an opportunity.

As expected, there were three men from Saint Sunlight Sect. None of them were as strong as Han Bingxue. That was why he was so confident. He made a reckless attack and killed one of them. However, when the fight was done, he realized he had been ambushed. People from Saint Sunlight Sect had surrounded him from all directions...

Over twenty level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators were surrounding him.

Apparently, it was a trap. Saint Sunlight Sect made this look like an opportunity for Shadowless Assassin!

Finally, Shadowless Assassin got ambushed!

He fought so hard to get out the encirclement of the enemy. He had been fighting while escaping. However, he kept getting hurt

after so many fights. After running for thousands of miles, he was exhausted.

Saint Sunlight Sect had been calling for more and more disciples to join the hunt. At this moment, there were thousands of them.

Shadowless Assassin exposed himself after a tough fight, so he encountered Bu Tianfei.

Bu Tianfei realized the assassin was too weak to fight back, so he wanted to take the credit himself. He drove away his company and got to the assassin on his own. In fact, if Ye Xiao didn't coincidentally show up, Bu Tianfei might have done what he wanted.

"If not for you, I may be delivered to Saint Sunlight Sect, or die in that bastard's hands." Shadowless Assassin looked touched. "No matter who you are, I appreciate this. Thank you."

Ye Xiao stayed silent and then spoke in a low voice, "The three factions are incredibly strong. You may get to kill some of them on your own, but you won't truly hurt them. Even though you are safe now, you will be caught sooner or later.

"They have so many people and they are so powerful. It is easy for them to put you down."

"Why don't you take a break since you are injured. After some time, maybe it will be a better opportunity for you to show up again." Ye Xiao said, "If you recklessly lose your life for nothing, wouldn't it be..."

Han Bingxue interrupted. He blandly said, "I know. I know I will die someday. I know I am too weak to destroy the three factions."

"So what? I just want to kill as many as I can. I will kill as many as possible until I die." He took a deep breath. "This time, the trap, the fights... They sent so many people out this time. This is an opportunity. Let me rest for a little longer and I will go sweep them off hard!"

"I mean... Look at yourself. You actually still want to go out and kill them? Are you going to kill someone or get yourself killed?" Ye Xiao twisted his mouth.

He felt rather upset and disappointed about that.

This reckless Shadowless Assassin was exactly Isolated Sword, Han Bingxue!

He was most known as Frost Sword in the realm!

However, Ye Xiao didn't want to tell him the truth. Once he told Han Bingxue that he was Xiao Monarch, Han Bingxue would definitely rush out to stir some huge disturbances in the world until the world was turned upside down...

When he acted alone without support, he had already made such troubles. If he had somebody behind him, he would definitely stir it even harder!

Ye Xiao knew him so well.

He looked icy, cold, and indifferent. People felt like he wouldn't even say a word to anybody, not even if he was killed.

In fact, he was a typical chatterbox.

The reason why he didn't talk to most of the people he met was that he didn't like them!

...

Chapter 944: Fortunate

If Han Bingxue disliked somebody, he wouldn't say a word to him.

However, if he liked somebody, for example Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch...

He would not stop talking until Ye Xiao wanted to and eventually did punch him on the face!

If he knew that Ye Xiao was still alive, he would definitely go to tell Black Calvary Alliance and Grey Wolf Group and stir up a much bigger disturbance.

Ye Xiao didn't believe it was the right time to do so.

It might get his good brothers all killed!

That was why he was quite troubled by the current situation. Han Bingxue was apparently going to lose his mind. He was too stubborn and paranoid.

He couldn't convince Han Bingxue with any reasonable facts!

Maybe only Xiao Monarch could make him truly listen.

He wouldn't listen to anybody else!

Even if Li Wuliang was here and told him, 'Let's stop taking revenge for Ye Xiao for now. We should make a plan.'

Han Bingxue might draw out his sword to fight Li Wuliang!

"I know you don't want to tell me, but I am curious. How do you know my true identity?" Han Bingxue said, "I am sure we haven't met ever before today."

He turned around looking at Ye Xiao.

His eyes were full of doubts.

Ye Xiao decided to look into his eyes. He smiled and said, "Brother, if you die, the Frost Ninefold Heaven's Art will be lost in

the world forever. It is fine that Han Bingxue is gone, but do you really want your intimate martial art to become just a name in the history?"

Frost Ninefold Heaven's Art!

Han Bingxue abruptly stood up. He stared at Ye Xiao and said, "You! You are..."

At this moment, something happened. - Shoot! - Something flicked the air. Somebody landed on the ground of the valley from the sky.

The person stared at both of them with cold and sharpness in the eyes.

The person sneered, "Shadowless Assassin? Heaven's vengeance is slow but sure. You may escape for some time, but not long. Haha... I am surprised. You are known to be a lone assassin. However, I see your partner now. Good. I can catch you both at the same time. That saves me lots of time."

The person was wearing cyan robe, with a long sword on his back. That was the typical dressing style of Saint Sunlight Sect.

Before he finished talking, the sounds of people flying sounded again. Three more men got down to the ground. "Disciple Brother Zhou... This place... Wait! Shadowless Assassin?"

The four disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect had found them.

They looked at each other. In their eyes, there was surprise and delight!

That was a huge credit.

Shadowless Assassin was meant to be a nightmare to them. However, the Shadowless Assassin now...

They saw Han Bingxue's miserable look, covered in blood, full of wounds, dying at any second... Ye Xiao was quite healthy, but he was quite weak in cultivation. That unexpected to them...

They could tell Ye Xiao was no higher than level eight of Dream Origin Stage.

And he was so young.

Ye Xiao should be one of the most talented cultivators because he had reached such a level in his teens. However, the four old cultivators wouldn't think any highly of him.

They were sure Ye Xiao must be ignorant like any other young cultivators, no matter how powerful he was in cultivation. They believed it wouldn't be difficult to put Ye Xiao down, as long as they fought carefully! They were certain that Ye Xiao was like all other young generations!

The four of them all had the same conclusion. It was a piece of cake to kill Shadowless Assassin and his young friend at the same time!

Han Bingxue took a deep breath and looked at the four men. He was a bit pissed.

He thought Ye Xiao was going to tell him his true identity and the truth about other things that confused him. He was going to get the answers to the questions in his heart. However, the four stupid disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect interrupted.

They even acted arrogantly as if they were surely going to win the fight!

Han Bingxue wondered what gave them such courage!

He was freaking out. He had freaked out.

[You fucking bastards. Even if you want to die so badly, can't you show up one minute later? Is it so difficult for you to live just a bit longer?]

Ye Xiao turned to the four men. He saw how happy the four of them were, so he smiled. He said, "I guess we should stop this conversation until next time."

Han Bingxue looked cold on the face. He nodded and said, "It won't be long. It won't take me long to kill them all."

The strongest of the four was only level two of Dao Origin Stage. It should be easy for Han Bingxue to kill them all, even though he had just recovered fifty percent!

A level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator with fifty percent power was still incredibly powerful. It was as powerful as level seven, even early level eight!

The difference between two levels was always existent!

Before Ye Xiao reached Dream Origin Stage, he was bullied by a bunch of Dream Origin Stage disciples in early levels. He was totally full of wounds. He won at last, but he was definitely much weaker in cultivation!

However, after he reached Dream Origin Stage, even though it was only level one, he could defeat all disciples in the same stage! That was the huge gap between two stages!

Han Bingxue was recovered fifty percent. That meant he was a horrible opponent at the moment!

The four men were still feeling delighted. They couldn't even wait to fight Han Bingxue as soon as it could be!

However, they would get to know how wrong they were. They would have to give in their lives to learn the truth! They would definitely be surprised, but not in a good way!

"Shadowless Assassin. Look at you. You are seriously hurt. Don't fight. Just give up," the oldest of the four men spoke. He looked fierce and brutal. In his eyes, it could be told that he was rather happy about what was happening. [Finally! I got the opportunity of my life!]

"By the way, you actually escaped our grand elders that day. What a good luck. However, you were hit by the Scorching Palm Strike. The power of the scorching energy will destroy every bit of

your ice qi. If you think you still have such good luck, you can still keep fighting back. We don't mind. After all, we all want a chance to beat up a powerful cultivator with our own fists."

"Urh..."

Ye Xiao was totally ignored. That was obvious. He rubbed his nose and thought, "Come on. Are you blind? We are two people here. He is too weak to fight you at the moment, but I am here to fight, am I not?"

...

Chapter 945: Monarch's Footwork!

Ye Xiao was a little too weak to defeat the four of them indeed. He was, after all, one stage lower than them. However, he wasn't an ordinary cultivator. Besides, this seemed to be a life and death moment. He had lots of things that he could use in a fight. He was free to use any of them now. In fact, it was that difficult for Ye Xiao to defeat those four.

"You?" The four of them turned over their head and looked at Ye Xiao, as if they had just realized he was there. They glanced at him and then just ignored him. In their eyes, there was disdain.

"Who do you think you are?" the only one who spoke was the man who first saw Shadowless Assassin. He was enjoying the moment. He had seen how terribly injured Shadowless Assassin was by his own eyes.

When Han Bingxue escaped from the enemies' entrapment, he spat out blood with small pieces of viscera. The man saw it himself. He believed Shadowless Assassin was definitely dying. Besides, he was hit by the Scorching Palm Strike, which would stay deep in his body and continue to hurt him.

Now that he was caught up by the four of them, they all thought he would never be able to win the fight!

They simply believed he was unable to fight back!

What surprised them was that a young man actually stood out to play the hero... Hero and... somebody?

Wait. They didn't know Shadowless Assassin's real identity, but they were pretty sure he was a man. It could be a hero saving a beauty though... However, It should be better to put it a hero saving a somebody!

Ye Xiao actually told them they could fight him instead of Shadowless Assassin.

That seemed quite stupid!

For them, what Ye Xiao said was like, 'Shadowless Assassin cannot move anymore. You can do whatever you want, but you should get over my dead body...'

Well, that was a typical rookie in the martial world.

[You? A rookie? You want to save him? Are you insane...]

[Let us show you what reality is like so that you can learn how cruel the martial world is sooner!]

Han Bingxue half-closed his eyes. He was speechless.

[Is he willfully showing weakness to the enemy? To make them lose alert?]

[Come on... Isn't it too obvious?]

"Who... do I... think I am?" Ye Xiao heard what they said and he looked a bit scared. But then he spoke in a loud voice, "I am the boss in my family!"

'I am the boss!'

He was an enemy to the four men of Saint Sunlight Sect, but they were still amused when they heard what Ye Xiao said.

They had never met someone like him before. [What a weirdo!] They thought.

He was their enemy, otherwise, they would like to give him more time to amuse them...

"Hmm. After we kill you, we may go to your family." A man blandly smiled. "I am sure your families will be surprised and glad that you are actually a friend of some evils. How lucky you are!"

Another man looked impatient. He said, "Chief, come on, let's just do it. Stop that useless talk. No matter how funny that stupid young man is, he means nothing to us. If somebody else come and snatch the chance, we won't be able to have the reward ourselves!"

Let's do it quickly."

The leader of them suddenly turned solemn. He said, "That's true. Let's do it now! Take that young man too!"

The one who was urged by the leader suddenly got excited. He dashed over to Ye Xiao with a full face of fierceness. He suddenly waved one hand in the air and a mass of raging heat shot over from the sky!

He didn't make a killing strike because he wanted to capture him alive!

Shadowless Assassin raised up his hands. He was prepared to take that strike.

He was a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator, whose eyes were so sharp. He had seen the cultivation status of Ye Xiao much earlier than the four men. He knew Ye Xiao was too weak. He was sure Ye Xiao would fail in a fight against Dao Origin Stage cultivators. Besides, he was facing four Dao Origin Stage cultivators at the same time.

He was able to fight now. Even if he wasn't, he would never sit there watching the young man being beaten or killed!

However, when he was about to make his move, before he could do anything, his eyes suddenly opened widely. His big eyes nearly popped out the eye frames. His mouth was wide opened for quite a while.

What he saw was too astonishing! That was the reason.

He even sweated because of it!

He saw the young man standing there like a god, with his clothes floating in the air. The young man casually stepped left a bit and then right, stepped forward with a stride, and in the end, took a turn and move to somewhere outside the attack range of the man from Saint Sunlight Sect.

Han Bingxue was an expert in cultivation. He knew how difficult it was when he saw it. When Ye Xiao stepped left, he broke the fierce assaulting qi; then he stepped right, it slowed down the speed of the attack further; by stepping ahead, he got away from the area under attack. When he took the turn at the end, it was just showing off. He was just doing all of the moves so casually.

The young man was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage, yet he was able to dodge the attack from a level two Dao Origin Stage. He even did it so casually?

Han Bingxue was totally shocked. Besides... he felt that the footwork of the young man seemed quite familiar!

Not only the other three men of Saint Sunlight Sect, but also Han Bingxue was shocked and confused.

The man who attacked failed to hurt Ye Xiao. His face suddenly turned dark. He started to attack faster and faster. Suddenly, energy flows filled the entire place.

He was obviously making area attacks, trying to hit Ye Xiao!

However, Ye Xiao just kept making those casual steps. Left, right, forward, backward, turn-over, and turn-over...

He just dodged so easily, no matter how fierce and powerful the opponent was attacking. He looked so casual. The attacks were like a rainstorm, which could not even get his sleeve wet.

He kept dodging as if he was losing. However, the others felt like he was a king, taking a walk in his own garden, with elegance.

He stepped and stepped, smiling, as if he was born a king who had just descended to the world of mortals!

He was giving people such a feeling, exactly because of the special footwork he was using!

...

Chapter 946: Monarch's Sword!

The three other men of Saint Sunlight Sect saw that and they were stunned. They couldn't believe what they had just seen.

Han Bingxue was stunned at the beginning, but when he saw Ye Xiao play the footwork the second time, he was more than just shocked! At least his eyes told more than that!

After a while, tears started to fill his eyes with joy and happiness!

He was about to cry!

Deep in his heart, there was a raging tide. [What did I just see? That... That footwork... Isn't it Brother Ye's personal martial art!]

[The footwork of a conqueror!]

[Brother Ye told me once. It is called Supremacy Walk!]

[He gave it the name himself, according to the feeling he had to this footwork. There is no other footwork that can be better than this! Even though there are footworks faster and harder than this, none of them could be so dominating like this!]

[This is... Brother Ye's personal martial art!]

[This young man... Is he connected to Brother Ye somehow?]

Han Bingxue was lost in thoughts.

All that filled his head was his Brother Ye who had died for a long time!

[Finally, I saw the martial art of yours again! I feel it!]

He actually nearly shed tears.

[I have been risking my life, living as Shadowless Assassin, to kill all superior cultivators in the three factions! I am doing it because of you! I do it because I want to avenge you, Brother Ye!]

[I want to do something for you! For my good old Brother Ye!]

[I want everybody in Qing-Yun Realm to know and to see that there are people who still care about Xiao Monarch! There are his brothers who have been trying to avenge him! There are still his brothers living in the world!]

[Even though he is dead, his brothers will still be the ceaseless pain for the three factions!]

[We will risk our lives, we will give up our lives to show them this!]

[My life belongs to Brother Ye! I deserve to die for him!]

[I never knew that two years after he died, I actually saw his personal movements in somebody else. I felt him in this young man when he made the footwork!]

[This young man must be Brother Ye's successor!]

[No wonder he would save me...]

[No wonder he knows my true identity!]

Tears fell down...

At this moment, a change was brought to the battle...

Ye Xiao and the opponent both moved backward fast like shooting stars. The man of Saint Sunlight Sect suddenly shook his body, and suddenly, he made nine faint shadows of himself! The nine figures suddenly all rushed to Ye Xiao from nine different directions. Apparently, he was going to give no space for Ye Xiao to step away. He wanted to kill him with one strike!

Ye Xiao was moving backward at the beginning, and then suddenly, he turned over while moving and attacked one of the figures. He had pushed out his hands and it didn't seem so powerful, but eight of the nine figures vanished! Only that man himself was revealed!

The old man's shadow plays failed, but he didn't slow down his attack. He was still rushing to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao had removed all

fake figures but also restrained his own movement. He couldn't dodge anymore, so he had to take it in a rough way!

That man was level two of Dao Origin Stage already. Ye Xiao was merely level seven of Dream Origin Stage. That was a huge disparity. Even though the man's attack was only in thirty percent power, it was still overwhelmingly much powerful than what Ye Xiao could do. Everybody else knew it!

No matter how stunning it was when Ye Xiao destroyed the eight faint figures, he was losing this after that!

However, when the two of them were about crash, a stream of bright blue light shined like a sudden tide-rise!

At the same time, Ye Xiao suddenly stood up straight, looking forward to the man indifferently! He was where the blue light came from!

No matter the man who was attacking, or the others who were watching, they all felt some special atmosphere.

That blue light was a sword attack, which didn't seem like an attack from a man who was in combat!

It was like a death sentence of a king, with elegance and solemnness!

Swordplay of a King!

The level two Dao Origin stage cultivator felt it in the clearest way. He should have been winning the fight with his overwhelming attack, yet his attack stopped. He suddenly trembled. His face turned pale as if there was no blood in it.

He felt his heart stop and he exclaimed, "Monarch's Sword! It's the Monarch's Sword Move! Ahhhh..."

Before he finished, the splendid blue light shined even brighter, rolling up to the sky. The sword breath suddenly expanded to a marvelous level. It overwhelmingly rushed down to the man!

Among the bright and beautiful sword lights, there was a blast of cold qi!

- Puff! -

That man's face still looked scared and pale, yet his tall and tough body started to turn soft and fall down the floor.

On his forehead, there was a small wound with blood in it.

However, a bloodstream shed out fast from the back of his head!

One sword strike!

Instant kill!

He could never have seen this happening to him, not even in his dreams!

He was in quite a high level in cultivation already. He wasn't that easy to kill. When he was fighting Ye Xiao at the beginning, he felt that the footwork was more excellent than he expected. He even thought of the footwork of Xiao Monarch for one second.

He was doubtful when he had that thought. That was why he was in a hurry to make his killing strike so soon, which was called Phantom of Eight! It made nine faint figures, including eight fake figures and one true to attack Ye Xiao. He could become any of the eight phantoms and leave a new one as he wish. That was a marvelous move that could perfectly restrain Ye Xiao's footwork. He wanted to surround Ye Xiao with that great move and kill him with one strike!

He thought he would at least create an opportunity to fight Ye Xiao and suppress him. He was right though. Ye Xiao noticed the secret of the move, and he even broke it. However, unavoidably, he had to fight the man in a tough way afterwards!

However, the man didn't think of the coming part of what would happen. He could never know that the young man would actually play a Monarch's Sword at the end!

Monarch's Sword of Xiao Monarch!

Xiao Monarch was the most powerful and dangerous enemy the three factions had ever met in about three thousand years. Even though in their hearts, he was long gone, the terror of Xiao Monarch was still haunting them all! In fact, it was getting stronger and stronger during the two years!

Because there was Jun Yinglian!

Because there was Shadowless Assassin...

Because there seemed to be a lot more...

...

Chapter 947: Frost Heaven!

In the two years, ninety-five percent of the people who died in Saint Sunlight Sect was because of the horrible Xiao Monarch!

Everyone in Saint Sunlight Sect felt it lucky that Xiao Monarch was dead. If he was alive, what consequence would that lead them to?

[Luckily, Xiao Monarch was being reckless because of anger. Luckily, he jumped out and fought us all face to face. Luckily, he couldn't control his sorrow and started that stupid fight. Luckily, he died...]

[If he chose to stay low for sometime and kill us secretly like Shadowless Assassin...]

[That would be a disaster for us.]

They thought.

They were right. Individuals, no matter how powerful they were, could never make any real influence, because they didn't have a backbone.

If Ye Xiao was alive—well, he was alive, but nobody knew—his people would become an army...

They could even contend against the three factions!

Xiao Monarch was a horrible name that kept frightening the disciples in the three factions.

As the man of Saint Sunlight Sect who was just killed by Ye Xiao saw the sword move, he freaked out. That was why he suddenly stopped the attack.

He died within one second because he stopped.

That got himself killed!

In a combat, every second could decide the end. He was fighting

the world-shocking Monarch's Sword Move!

Monarch's Sword ruled the world!

It was not a sword attack that the Saint Sunlight Sect disciple could deal with. Even though the man was in level two of Dao Origin Stage, even though he was five levels higher than the man who played that sword move, he lost!

The true overwhelming aura of Xiao Monarch, the Monarch's Sword and the peerless Stars Sword, all of them together became irresistible! In fact, even if the man was concentrated in the fight, he could only end up dead under the sword strike, let alone he already panicked before the sword approached his head. He had lost faith. He was sure he lost!

...

The two words he said before he died had astonished the four men who were watching.

The other three men of Saint Sunlight Sect was going to attack Shadowless Assassin when the other one was fighting Ye Xiao. They just wanted to get it done as soon as possible. However, before they did it, they heard the three words the man who died. They exclaimed at the same time. They were frightened and didn't even make any move.

In fact, Han Bingxue could kill them all easily while they were stunned, but he didn't!

He was also stunned. His eyes were shining with bright lights, staring at the young man. He was thrilled. Luckily, the three men of Saint Sunlight Sect didn't attack him, otherwise, he would have died!

Apparently, Han Bingxue couldn't have anything in mind except the two words!

Monarch's Sword!

[That's... Monarch's Sword The long lost Monarch's Sword!]

[I saw it again... for real once, I saw it again!]

[He must be... the successor....]

The three men of Saint Sunlight Sect were in disarray. Han Bingxue was also lost in thoughts. Only one person at present was acting normal! Apparently, it was Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao killed that man with one attack, but he didn't stop. He ran fast with his sword ahead like a rushing tide. At the same time, he shouted, "What the hell are you waiting for? Can't you do something? Do you want them to go back and tell everyone else?"

Before he finished, he had already attacked the three Dao Origin Stage cultivators of Saint Sunlight Sect dozens of times!

The three men were still in shock. They could only defend themselves with instinct and couldn't fight back at all!

Three level two Dao Origin Stage cultivators were actually being suppressed by a level seven Dream Origin Stage young man.

- Clang, clang, clang... -

After a few times of sword clank, the three men hurriedly drew out their long sword, but got cut into halves by Ye Xiao's Stars Sword!

Most of the weapons in the world were just like trash in front of the sharpness of Stars Sword! It could basically cut everything apart!

That was easy.

The three swords were broken. Blood came next.

Somebody was wounded.

They didn't expect the young man's sword could be so sharp!

Han Bingxue was enlightened by Ye Xiao's shout.

[He is right! What am I doing? I should better get on doing the

serious things now!]

[No matter who he is to Brother Ye, I can't let these men go back and report to Saint Sunlight Sect!]

He made a decision. Suddenly, his eyes lit up. He drew out the sword and the cold ice qi filled the entire valley instantly.

"Kill!"

The sword lights covered the three men all of a sudden, like storms in the ocean!

In order to keep the secret of 'Xiao Monarch's successor', Han Bingxue made his killing strikes directly.

Frost Heaven!

He hadn't used it even when he was facing the enemies' hunt!

He didn't want to expose himself by showing them his personal skill...

He himself didn't fear death, but he had families. He could die for his Brother Ye, but he wouldn't get his families involved.

He could die in the realm, but he must leave his families safe and sound!

However, at this moment, in order to kill the three men, he made that strike without hesitation.

He saw hope.

[Brother Ye... He had a successor...]

"You... You are... Han..."

"Han Bingxue... You... Shadowless Assassin..."

"Arhhh..." With an exclamation, the man who seemed to be the oldest of the three stepped back staggeringly. There was a hole of blood in his chest. He stepped back slowly and looked at Han Bingxue. He couldn't believe it... "You should be... badly injured... How come..."

Before he could finish it, he fell back on the floor and then never moved again.

The other two actually died before him. They were peeled off by Han Bingxue already, leaving two skeletons. In the valley, it smelled only blood.

Han Bingxue was still showing a cold face. - Clang! - He put the sword back into the scabbard, stared at the three cold dead bodies, and spoke blandly, "I could get injured. I could get cured too."

Nobody knew for whom his answer was.

The three men... Well... Three dead bodies surely wouldn't be able to hear it...

"Hide your frost qi. Do not get yourself exposed." Ye Xiao called his attention.

...

Chapter 948: Terrified!

Han Bingxue made a full power strike, not even trying to hide the trace of himself. The Frost Ninefold Heaven's Art was his signature. If somebody saw it, somebody who just needed to know a little about the martial world would immediately know him. It was obviously Frost Sword who made that strike.

Han Bingxue laughed and reached out his hand. A pumping power started to gather the frost qi back to him. - Shoot! - It was all collected to Han Bingxue's hands.

He raised his hands and everything was returned to normal. There were no traces of a slaughter except the four dead bodies.

[He actually knows that I can withdraw my frost qi... Not a simple young man...] He thought as he was doing it.

"Let's go!"

The two of them flew out fast one after the other and disappeared into the forest.

...

After a while, where the fight had taken place was in a disturbance already.

More people from Saint Sunlight Sect arrived. They all shouted in anger and shock.

More and more people came.

They all couldn't believe what they saw. A man who was dying, who they thought would die at any second, actually... killed four Dao Origin Stage cultivators at the same time and casually fled away...

The scene was well cleaned. There were no traces of him. Nobody knew where he went.

They could think of only one possibility. Shadowless Assassin

was way stronger than the four men who died. Besides, he could perfectly hide his traces and let nobody notice where he went.

He could actually hide the smell of his body, his spiritual mind power, and his killing intent!

They knew Shadowless Assassin could absolutely do that. He had killed lots of their men before this. They knew he must be in the top level of Dao Origin Stage!

However, they just couldn't understand. He shouldn't be well enough to do so!

They believed he was dying... They believed he would die at any second!

[The elders who badly hurt him promised that he was dying!]

[Then how could he possibly hide so well?]

[He is able to hide himself this well. Doesn't it mean he is still able to fight?]

[Maybe he can't fight the top cultivators in our sect, but to fight us...]

They were not stupid. They knew how powerful and horrible a top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator could be!

Everybody wanted the credit, but it was a different story if they had to risk their lives for it!

Suddenly, they were all terrified. Their hearts were filled with fear.

Shadowless Assassin might be able to kill them all... even if he was just recovered partly...

If he was fully recovered, he could even swallow the thousands of men they had at the moment, one by one, bite after bite.

"Send a message to the sect! We need help! Tell them... Shadowless Assassin is fully recovered!"

A middle-aged man with dark beard gave the order.

"Yes."

The middle-aged man made a deep sigh when he looked at the carrier hawk fly up to the sky.

This was the most large-scale action of Saint Sunlight Sect in the two years. They actually assigned over twenty elder level cultivators at a time.

However, it caused them a loss. All the superior cultivators who were assigned to this got injured in different extents. Some of them were too seriously hurt to recover. After they made sure Shadowless Assassin was injured to the point of death, they decided to let others chase him and they could go back to the sect and try to heal themselves...

The younger generation was doing the searching mission.

Surely, it was a great training project for the young generation.

"We don't fear death. We don't need people who fears for death," the elders told the disciples. That represented the attitude of the sect.

"It is certainly a safe hunt. Why don't we just let the young generations join this mission. It could be a boost for them!"

"Even though the Shadowless Assassin can barely move, he is still has that overwhelming aura. I guess after our men get through this, they will be enhanced both mentally and physically!"

"It can make them feel the strength of soul. They can also learn to know that a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator can still be killed, even by lower level cultivators, after torturing. That will warn them of the cruelty of the true martial world."

"It is benefiting the sect in a long term."

"The death of a super powerful cultivator is a warning to the entire Qing-Yun Realm, let alone they are all young lads!"

...

That was Saint Sunlight Sect's decision.

They all recognized it as a perfect plan.

That was the cruel martial world. That was the rule!

The stronger ones survived!

Saint Sunlight Sect wanted their young disciples to learn more about that.

However, things went wrong. Their younger generation could complete the mission and pass the trial only when Shadowless Assassin was truly unable to fight anymore.

What if he was still able to? What if he reserved the power? What if he was fully recovered?

They sent out so many young disciples like they had sent out lots of sheep, no, rabbits, into a forest where a huge tiger lived!

That was feeding the tiger!

It was such a serious situation...

"All disciples, stick together! Do not move alone!"

"Stay on our range. Dao Origin Stage disciples. You are on guard. When you notice something wrong, do not start a fight. Get away and warn the others!"

The dark-bearded middle-aged man gave an order with a solemn face.

That was the only strategy he could think of. It was not so positive, but it could more or less save their own men.

If the thousands of young disciples died out there, he would be suffering something more terrible than death when he returned.

He could do nothing but pray in the heart. [Elders, great elders... Please come to help...]

[What if the Shadowless Assassin shows up. I am level seven of Dao Origin Stage. I may not be able to stop him.]

...

Chapter 949: Only One!

"You are Brother Ye's successor!" They were in somewhere else. Han Bingxue looked relieved. When he looked at Ye Xiao, he looked nice and amiable.

[Successor of Brother Ye...]

[Brother Ye was such a heroic man. His successor is just as good as he was!]

[I don't know when he got himself a private disciple, but... well... I will give up my life to keep his disciple safe!]

[The name of Xiao Monarch is going to pass on by this young man here.]

He felt happy and satisfied.

In fact, Ye Xiao was speechless and awkward. He looked at this 'enlightened' Frost Sword... He didn't know what to say about it.

[What I did was try to show you who I really am... Now I have shown you whatever you should see to figure out my true identity... Yet... You actually think I am your Brother Ye's successor...]

[What an enlightenment...]

[Look at that weird glow in his eyes... Holy heavens... He has to stop looking at me like that. How can he look at me like that...]

[He is taking advantage of me... He actually wants me to call him uncle...]

[Holy F***. I should be looking at you like that.]

[Don't you remember who saved your life? Didn't I just save you from some really dangerous people?]

Ye Xiao was upset. He spoke moodily, "I mean... Come on. How hard is it to figure out who I truly am?"

That was such an unexpected question. It shocked Han Bingxue. Han Bingxue laughed and answered, "Hahaha... What are you talking about, kiddo? I just figured it out! It's easy. Isn't it? Fine. I am an uncle to you. So I guess I should just try to be forgiving!"

[Kiddo? Did? Uncle?]

[Are tired of being alive? I promise I will kill you if you want to die. How dare you take advantage of me like that?]

Ye Xiao made a long sigh, frowned, and said, "You know, Frost Ninefold Martial Art..."

"I know! I understand. Your master told you about it, right?" Han Bingxue was quite certain. "That's not strange at all... You master knew everything about me. There is no secret between him and me."

In a casual way, he reached out a hand and tapped on Ye Xiao's head. "Not bad, kiddo. You must be improving real fast. Besides, you have those fabulous dan beads... That is something much better than your master. Hmm. Do you have more dan beads like that? Give your fellow master one more. The sooner I am fully recovered, the sooner I will go out and kill them all! I will show you how powerful your master's brother is! I am world-shocking, overwhelming, murderous. and invincible!"

[Okay. Okay. That is too much. Uncle? Fellow master?]

[You are not going to stop taking advantage of me, are you?]

[Fair enough. I won't forget about this. We will get back to this topic soon!]

Ye Xiao's mouth was twisting...

[You believe I am my own disciple... Fine... Where does 'fellow master' come from? We are not disciples to the same master!]

[Fine! Even if I were my disciple, I am still not... You are not my... Fellow master? Really?]

[Holy heavens. That's confusing.]

[Pah! I am puzzling myself into it. He's taking advantage of me, and I am actually helping him think about how I should call him. I must be out of my mind because of anger!]

"It's fine if you don't have any. I know it is not easy to have lots of such great dan beads." Ye Xiao didn't answer, so Han Bingxue thought he had difficulty to give more dan beads. "Hmm. However, you must be careful out there."

He earnestly said to Ye Xiao, "Especially when you want to make friends with somebody, you have to be alerted. Learn from your master. He chose a bunch of real tough pals, brothers like me... You must know what a real friend means..."

Ye Xiao was speechless and embarrassed. He felt awkward!

[Is this Han Bingxue? He will keep nagging only when he stays with me!]

[But he doesn't know I am me! He thinks I am my disciple! Why is he so nagging? This is not right!]

Han Bingxue talked and talked, bragging about how good himself was.

The only thing he forgot to say was, 'I am good! I am super! I am marvelous! I am wonderful...'

[You want to give the young generation a lesson. That's fine. But... Do you have to do it this way? Keep bragging?]

"Sigh..." Ye Xiao made a long sigh. "I always know you are a chatterbox, but I never knew you are such a narcissistic man..."

Most people didn't really know about Han Bingxue. In their eyes, Han Bingxue was as cold as frost, as if he could chill others to death. They believed he would not say one unnecessary word even if he would die because of it!

That was cool!

That was awesome!

However, whoever really knew him, especially people who gave Han Bingxue the feeling of 'free to talk', like Ye Xiao, knew that Han Bingxue was actually a....

That was hard to describe.

What a weirdo! He must be unique in the entire realm.

Peerless in the universe!

Unique to the world!

Ye Xiao made a long sigh and said, "The Frost Ninefold Martial Art, step by step, it gets harder. Frost in the world, far away from heavens. Frost from the sky, freeze the earth. How many times of hardship does one have to overcome? Even saint doesn't know. When you think of such a question again, you have already been through thousands..."

He started to speak out loud.

Han Bingxue's eyes was turning bigger and bigger. He couldn't believe what he heard.

That was the main formula of Frost Ninefold Martial Art.

Only two people in the world should know about it.

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch!

Nobody else knew it. Han Bingxue was sure.

Even the disciple of Xiao Monarch could never have the chance to know it!

He believed Xiao Monarch would never tell anybody else about this, not even to his son, let alone just a disciple! Xiao Monarch would never do it.

It concerned about his honesty and honor!

A man could never live without honesty!

Xiao Monarch was an honest and honorable man!

Then how did the young man get to know?

[He is skillful in Xiao Monarch's martial arts. He should definitely be his disciple. He has to be!]

[Wait... There is another possibility...]

[There should be one person who also knows about his martial arts. Yes... There is...]

[One more...]

...

Chapter 950: Brother, It's Me!

Han Bingxue was enlightened. He looked at Ye Xiao and he was solemn. He still couldn't believe it.

[Could it be...]

Ye Xiao looked straight into Han Bingxue's eyes and spoke in a low voice, "Brother, it's me!"

Brother, it's me.

As simple as that. A few words revealed the truth!

Han Bingxue was shocked. He slowly turned over and stared at Ye Xiao. He couldn't believe it. His face turned red and then pale. His lips started to tremble. "You... Are you real?"

He started to quiver. He looked at Ye Xiao and murmured, "Is this real?"

Ye Xiao sighed and nodded, and then gently said, "Brother, it's me. For real."

And he added, "It's me, Ye Xiao!"

Han Bingxue still couldn't believe this. He looked at Ye Xiao and quivered, "Boss?"

Then he abruptly closed his eyes as two lines of tears fell down on his cheeks. He murmured, "Boss... You are my savior. I never forget what you did for me. Now that you are dead. I swear I will avenge you! Trust me!"

"I know you came back. You want to see me, and you actually saved me one more time. I am grateful! I know you never ask anything in return, but I will avenge you, even if I will have to walk through fire and blades, even if I get myself smashed. I promise I will! No matter what, I will root up all the three factions, so as to ease the grudge in your heart! Rest in peace, Boss!"

He kept closing his eyes and gritted his teeth while speaking.

Ye Xiao was quite touched at the beginning, but when Han Bingxue said the latter part... Ye Xiao freaked out.

[Holy mother cracking heavens and hell...]

[I can't be franker now. How come he sees me as a ghost?]

[What part of me looks like a ghost? Why on earth are you so sure that I never ask anything in return?]

[Hmm... Indeed I never want you to return the favor... Well, I am not a ghost! I am not dead! To what end do you want me to rest in peace!!!]

Ye Xiao just wanted to beat Han Bingxue's head to a pulp and check what was inside his head that made him so stupid...

[Isn't it more possible that I took another body to reincarnate, considering what has happened? Yet the only idea you have in your mind is that I showed up as a ghost? What? Are you insane? What a stupid man!]

"You are... unbelievable..." Ye Xiao looked at Han Bingxue, "I am not dead! What are you doing here? Mourn? I am standing right in front of you, alive! What? What else should I do? Do you really want me to die that much? Do you want to let me die?"

Han Bingxue was stunned. He opened his eyes and stared at Ye Xiao like waking up from a bad dream. He seemed unable to accept the truth yet. After a while, he blinked and said, "What... What did you just say?"

"What did I say? I said I am alive! How did you live these days? Can't you understand human language now?"

Ye Xiao answered. He was speechless.

"Alive..." Han Bingxue blinked. He was trying to accept what Ye Xiao said. It seemed it was too difficult to understand what was going on yet.

After a while, he suddenly jumped up high and exclaimed loudly

in excitement, "Alive!"

Ye Xiao awkwardly looked at the man who ran crazy in front of him.

"Holy heavens!" Han Bingxue grabbed his own hair and kept shouting, "You are not dead! You are alive! How? How can you still be alive?"

He grabbed his own hair and kept shouting, jumping, and staring.

"What do you mean how can I still be alive? Don't you want me to live?" Ye Xiao shouted.

"Hmm... Yes, of course, I want you to be alive. I mean... Urh... I mean how is this possible..." Han Bingxue was scared. He suddenly calmed down!

"Holy fxck..." Ye Xiao wanted to mourn for himself really. "I am alive! Do you understand? I am not dead yet! What kind of stupid question, possible or not... Just shut up or I will beat you up till you can't take care of yourself for the rest of your goddamn life!"

He couldn't endure this anymore. He was actually ready to start punching Han Bingxue. He didn't know what more to say to explain everything.

[I am not dead yet. Such a simple fact, yet he is so over-shocked and astonished. He actually asked how I could still be live? What?]

Ye Xiao was pissed. He didn't know what to say about it anymore. The only thing he could think of was to beat Han Bingxue up hard!

Nobody should blame Ye Xiao for being narrow-minded. Han Bingxue was being too stupid. Ye Xiao surely understood that his brother was being stupid because he was too surprised. However, it sounded like he didn't want Ye Xiao to be back from death.

Han Bingxue kept jumping and shouting. In fact, even he himself didn't know what he was saying. He just kept saying nonsense

loudly.

"Can't you just stop? The only reason I am still not beating you is that I am too weak at the moment, and I may be beaten up by you instead. Otherwise, you will not be able to get off the floor now!" Ye Xiao frowned and said, "Do you forget what place we are staying now... You... You are drawing attention from our enemies! Can't you stop? Before anybody finds us?"

"That's right..." Han Bingxue suddenly calmed down and said, "I mean... Let's go. We should find somewhere else to stay."

Then he dragged Ye Xiao's arm and jumped out nearly a hundred meters. In fact, when he was in the air, he suddenly turned over like a psychopath and shouted, "Holy shxt! You are not dead! You are alive! What a surprise!"

[Holy fxck!]

Ye Xiao was totally about to freak out. He could feel it himself.

[Are you serious? Do you want me to die so hard? What are you...]

However, there was nothing he could do. He had to let Han Bingxue grab him and drag him ahead fast. Even though Han Bingxue was like a fool, he was still a powerful cultivator. Although he was only half recovered, he was still too powerful for Ye Xiao. The only thing Ye Xiao could do was to accept whatever Han Bingxue did to him!

After four hours, they had already left that area. They arrived at a forest.

Han Bingxue was finally sober after the cold wind slapped on his face all the way along. When they finally got to the safe place, he held Ye Xiao's arms and said in excitement, "Boss, is this really you? Are you real?"

...

Chapter 951: Strong Brotherhood!

Ye Xiao nodded. He was a bit frustrated. "Yes..."

He was annoyed by the hours long mental torture from Han Bingxue. He was quite happy to see Han Bingxue at the beginning after the two years. However, after the several hours, the happiness in his heart was almost gone...

"How did you become like this?" Han Bingxue was confused. He stared at Ye Xiao and asked.

"You are a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, brother. How could you ask me such a stupid question? Well... It's kind of like a walk-in situation... but not really... Anyway, let me start from the beginning..." Ye Xiao showed a bitter face and explained everything.

Han Bingxue kept staying close to Ye Xiao and said, "Hmm. I see. I understand. Okay, I get it. Why don't you punch me? You said you wanted to punch me earlier. Come on. Let's do it. Use your special technique. Quick. Come beat me. Full power Laughing Eight Blast!"

"God damn it! Are you insane?" Ye Xiao was pissed. "It's a footstep technique! How do I attack you with a footstep technique? You idiot! You want me to be an idiot like you?"

Han Bingxue raised up his head and looked at Ye Xiao. Finally, he was surprised. "Boss... You are real..."

[Damn! He's trying to test me! He still doesn't believe I am Ye Xiao!]

He decided to do something. He turned over one hand and then a word showed up in the air, moving over and hitting Han Bingxue's face.

He couldn't endure it anymore, so he just showed Han Bingxue the strongest evidence to make him stop nagging!

As he expected, Han Bingxue suddenly fell back to the floor like a rotten wood stick after being hit by that word, 'Xiao'!

Then he hurriedly got up off the ground with tears on his face. He was so happy. "Boss... It is you... It really is you..."

He actually rushed over to Ye Xiao and held him tight in the arms. He kept laughing, jumping, and crying. "I can't even dream about this. Boss. I can't believe you are still alive... You have no idea how it felt for me when I learned you died... I have almost gone insane... There has been nothing I care about except to avenge you. There is no Xiao Monarch in the world anymore, and there won't be Han Bingxue either. Without you, there is no me..."

Ye Xiao sighed and spoke gently, "Brother... Brother..."

After a while, Han Bingxue finally calmed down. He wiped the tears on his face and said embarrassedly, "Oh. I look like a joke. I am just being..."

"You are showing me your true heart! If I ever even think of it as something to be ashamed of, I must be a joke!" Ye Xiao said, "Brother, thanks! Thank you, for everything you have done for me! You have been through too much in the two years."

Han Bingxue nearly shed tears again. "As long as I can have you back, there is nothing too much for me to do!"

He suddenly stood straight up and laughed. "The three factions are the joke! They believe they have killed the great Xiao Monarch! What a joke! Hahaha... That is the biggest joke in the universe!"

Ye Xiao nodded and smiled. He said, "I guess there are more than just one joke. Li is alive too."

"Li Wuliang?" Han Bingxue couldn't believe it. He was surprised. "Li Wuliang is alive too? He is actually alive? How could he..."

"Stop! Stop it right now... Are you out of your mind? Do not keep questioning things that you shouldn't. I say he is alive. That means he is not dead yet. He is alive! Do not ask any questions about it

anymore!" Ye Xiao had to stop him. He couldn't stand Han Bingxue's nagging anymore. That was terrible!

"I mean nothing bad! Truly! It is a great thing that you both are alive. A wonderful thing... Hmm... How is Li Wuliang doing? Is he alright? The three factions told everybody that Li Wuliang fell off the cliff and died. Nobody could have thought that he is still alive. Heavens do bless good people!" Han Dongxue said.

"He is alright. Just like me. After that fight, he survived but his power is wrecked. He hasn't recovered to Dao Origin Stage yet. It will take quite some time for him to fully recover to his prime condition." Ye Xiao sighed.

"That's not a big deal." Han Bingxue was still happy. "As long as you are alive, it is not a problem to recover. Just take the time. When you are ready, we will go wipe out the three factions once and for all!"

Ye Xiao nodded. In fact, he was having a different thought.

He couldn't let go of Cold Moon Palace.

And the people in it.

He made a long sigh.

The three factions were powerful. It wouldn't be easy to defeat them all. It would surely take a long time. Other than that, could he truly do it, when he had to fight against Cold Moon Palace?

He didn't have the answer. He was troubled!

"Bingxue, I am alive, so is Li. I think you should hold your revenge plan now." Ye Xiao said, "You can't do it on your own anymore. That's reckless. You are lucky that I went by earlier today. Nobody can always be lucky. If something like this happens again, you will die for nothing."

"Just wait till we are both recovered."

"It's your call." Han Bingxue laughed and said, "Brother Ye is

alive. Of course, he is the boss. I will only obey whatever instruction you give to me. We will march out when we are ready. Let's strike them with a surprise and powerful attack. I don't have any reason to give up my life anymore. I won't act any reckless. I am not a fool."

"Hmm." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Well, no more Shadowless Assassin."

"No more!" Han Bingxue smiled and said, "Xiao Monarch is back. So is Frost Sword."

They looked at each other and then started to laugh.

After a while, Ye Xiao walked out of the forest. Han Bingxue walked behind.

He had a pair of eyes that shined like stars and sharp eyebrows like swords. He was wearing all white clothes. His face looked a bit like ice. He was showing an aura of 'do-not-get-close' that might even freeze the entire world.

To look into his eyes, one would feel a chilling coldness from deep inside the bones.

That was the coldness of a hundreds of thousands of meters high snow mountain.

That was him, Han Bingxue.

He had removed his disguise and showed his true face now!

He was wearing all white from head to toe. Only his sword was black color. The handle of the sword was right behind his shoulder.

He looked handsome and inexorable.

He walked slowly, step by step, emitting the cold qi all around him. He was unique! He was a swan among a bunch of chickens in the world.

...

Chapter 952: Limitless Boldness

When Ye Xiao was Xiao Monarch, he would love to hang out with Li Wuliang and all the other brothers, except Han Bingxue, because Han was too good-looking. He was so handsome that it was hard for a man to like him!

What made people feel pissed was that he was always bold... That was quite difficult to endure...

Ye Xiao looked much better than Han Bingxue in this life, but he still didn't really like to stay show up with Han Bingxue. He was not being sentimental. He just couldn't stop thinking about how Han was nagging in front of him. He always freaked out listening to his nonsense. Every time when he thought about it, he couldn't help but want to kick Han Binxue hard in the ass and punch him again and again on the face! Otherwise, he would feel depressed!

Ye Xiao whistled to the sky. Before the whistle stopped resounding, horse steps suddenly resounded.

"Boss, your horse looks great." Han Bingxue looked at Darky. It was running fast from far away. He praised and said, "I have lived for many years in the martial world, yet I have never seen any horses that could compare to this one."

"That's reasonable!" Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "My Darky is the king of horses. Extraordinary!"

When he started the conversation, Darky was thousands of meters away. When Ye Xiao said 'extraordinary', Darky was already before their eyes, like a dark dragon riding in clouds.

It waved its tail and neighed, and then it placed its head to Ye Xiao's arms. That was quite a warm scene.

Ye Xiao checked on Darky and found that it was completely fine. Apparently, even though it had been chased by hundreds of people of Saint Sunlight Sect, it didn't get hurt at all.

Ye Xiao got on the horse and looked at Han Bingxue.

Without that stare, he was asking if Han Bingxue wanted to ride with him. However, he was also quite unwilling to share one horse with him! That was obvious in his eyes!

Han Bingxue proudly shook his head and said, "Boss, you ride the horse and I am fine on foot. Just don't ask me to wait for it."

Then he started to fly ahead. Honestly, he was running in quite a beautiful way.

Frost Sword shined in the world. That was not just kidding. If not for One Laughter in Skyline, which was the movement martial art of Xiao Monarch, Han Bingxue's Snow Flow could be the best and fastest movement skill in the realm!

Not long earlier, when they had been resting for a few hours, Ye Xiao let Han Bingxue swallow a few supreme dan beads. After that, Han Bingxue was ninety percent recovered. That was close to his prime.

He was so confident that he thought he could defeat anyone in anything.

Besides...

He thought that running on foot could show his greatness... not on a horse.

Besides, it was not a beautiful thing to ride on one pony with a man!

[Well, you can be shameless. You are Xiao Monarch. I can't. I care about my reputation. What if people think that you and me... we... I will want to kill myself.]

[Besides...]

[When I am alone...]

[The mountain is full of fallen leaves... Mountains were lying there in the distance. The forest is dense and dark. I am a beautiful

man wearing white clothes like snow, with my dark shiny sword on the back, walking step by step.]

[I look cold.]

[My sleeves are flowing...]

[In the breeze, yellow leaves fall in the air, and I walk through...]

[My face, my gesture, my appearance...]

[That was...]

He was obsessed by the scene that he imagined in his head...

[That must be beautiful...]

[I have been staying low for over a year, because I had to stay low to avenge my brother...]

[Such a pretty man, staying behind the scene for such a long time, it must be the loss of the world!]

[Now that he is alive, and he is back. I guess the world shocking, well known, extraordinary Frost Sword should shine up bright again to make it up!]

[I never asked to be a handsome man, but since I am, shouldn't I show it to the world? I have no choice!]

He was walking quite slowly in front of the horse, lost in his own imagination. Staring at him, Ye Xiao was speechless.

He knew Han Bingxue too well.

He just felt so speechless and embarrassed.

However, when Han Bingxue and Darky stayed together, it made a beautiful image... The man was beautiful like jade, while the horse was pretty like a dragon. A man and a horse, white and black, a perfect match. That was taking the limelight from Ye Xiao!

Suddenly, over a dozen men showed up in front of them, but Ye Xiao didn't notice in advance.

"Neigh..."

Before the owner of the horse, Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue stepped forward and stopped it in advance, with a gentle, long resounding, and pretty voice.

That made him look like a man who cared for nothing but only traveling the world.

[Bloody heavens and hell... You bold bastard... You just can't let go of any chance. That can't be more pretentious...] Ye Xiao was speechless.

He couldn't stop being speechless and awkward since he reunited with Han Bingxue!

The men who suddenly showed up were all wearing blue clothes. On the chest, there was a sign of a scorching sun. That was the sign of Saint Sunlight Sect. The men were all surprised while looking at Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue.

One was riding on a horse, while the other was walking, both handsome and casual.

These men, they had a problem now... According to the message they received, Shadowless Assassin and the young man had sent a horse away as a bait, drawing their attention away. That was a dark horse. What they were looking at now was exactly two men and a black horse...

The question was, did they get the right men?

What confused them was that the two men were so calm and steady.

Han Bingxue stepped forward and spoke blandly, "Who are you? Why do you stop us? What do you want?"

He sounded calm, cold, and indifferent.

He looked like a sage. To look at him, it felt like... he would never be shocked by anything... Flowers blossomed and died... He just

didn't care about anything...

That was something that could only be felt on some very special figures...

The men of Saint Sunlight Sect suddenly didn't know what to do while looking at Han Bingxue—they felt his coldness... "Urh... We are disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect... We are here to..."

Before that man finished, Han Bingxue nodded and casually asked, "Oh, you are from Saint Sunlight Sect. No wonder. I haven't left this Snow Storm Mountain for decades. I wonder how my brother, Wu Hui, is doing. How is he? Is he still the Prime Disciple of your sect?"

Ye Xiao nearly laughed.

...

Chapter 953: Coincidence

Han Bingxue was definitely pretentious to a professional level. If he was an actor, he would be a superstar.

He was facing the enemies who had been hunting him, who wanted to kill him, yet he was so casual, acting like he was somebody else. He just kept pretending... Ye Xiao had to admit he was impressed!

However, he was not just good at acting, but also good at writing his own lines. Those men had just said they were from Saint Sunlight Sect, and before they finished, Han Bingxue actually interrupted and mentioned Wu Huitian... He even added the line 'is he still Prime Disciple of your sect'...

That was bravo. Ye Xiao nearly got sick because he had been trying so hard not to laugh.

[I mean... Wu Huitian has taken the place of being the head of their sect for over eighty years... You actually talk like you are from nearly a hundred years ago...]

[You definitely proved one truth. That is, pretentiousness is a serious business!]

[There is no limit! There is no end!]

Han Bingxue was showing his profession on being pretentious. He was the great grand master in pretentiousness. He was just so great at it! He did it so casually!

He was calm, steady, and casual. He shocked the men of Saint Sunlight Sect at once.

After a while, one of them said, "Well... Urh... You there... You mean you know... our Prime Master?"

"Mind your language!" Han Bingxue slightly frowned and said, "Are disciples in Saint Sunlight Sect all behave like this? You know

I am senior, then why don't you use honorific? You there... Can't you call me master or something? Do you really think you can talk to me like that?"

The Saint Sunlight Sect people all turned pale in the face.

[Who are you... We don't know who you are... Who knows you are a senior or what... How can you just scold us like this.]

Han Bingxue blandly continued, "Prime Master... Oh... That's interesting. I never thought he would become your Prime Master... Not bad."

'Not Bad.'

Ye Xiao was living a second life now. He had been through all the difficulties down the lower realm and finally returned to this world. However, he nearly fainted when he heard Han Bingxue say the last few words. He had to submit to the excellent pretentiousness of Han Bingxue from the bottom of his heart.

'Not bad'. That was a compliment indeed. But that was usually said by a person in a higher position to the other in lower!

Wu Huitian was the head of Saint Sunlight Sect, the strongest of the seven great sects in the realm. Han Bingxue just talked like he was just a young man in his eyes?

Not bad?

It was just 'not bad' to be the Prime Master of such a great sect. What should be bad then? What should be good?

Should Wu Huitian become a match to Wu Fa, even able to defeat Wu Fa, to be good enough?

Ye Xiao nearly failed to endure this. The men of Saint Sunlight Sect were shocked.

They looked at each other. [Who is this guy? Where does he come from?]

[Why does he talk like that?]

[That seems to be impolite even to the elders of our sect!]

Han Bingxue was still acting casual and calm. He smiled and said, "Hmm. I can still feel all kinds of tastes in my heart when thinking of the old days... Well, I am old. I guess that's why I can't remember the exact time... Wu Huitian, the kid... He was good. Potential. He loved a girl like crazy. The girl, Ning. Hahaha... A man who is true to his heart. I always like to see how two persons in love can be together. So I helped a little... Well, I had something else to do, so I left before he told me the good news. I wonder if he married that young lady at the end? Is she your Prime Master's wife now?"

When he finished talking, the men from Saint Sunlight Sect suddenly became solemn and respectful.

The story of Wu Huitian courting Fairy Ning, the younger female disciple in Saint Sunlight Sect, was known to everybody in the sect. Everybody knew it as a beautiful love story. Everybody knew their Prime Master had been suffering a lot for the love from his wife when he was young...

However, after he became the Prime Master, nobody dared to talk about this story.

However... gossip never died. Nobody talked in public, but the story still kept spreading in the set. Every disciple knew it.

"Master, you are a friend to our Prime Master and his wife..." One of the disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect said with respect, "Please forgive our recklessness and ignorance. May I have your name please, Master?"

Han Bingxue looked so proud as if he was born in a higher position than anybody else. He blandly said, "What? After all that I said... you actually still don't know who I am?"

He shook and sighed. "Disciples in Saint Sunlight Sect are getting worse in common sense. You are lucky that I have been improving

my endurance all these years. Otherwise, I will teach you in a tough way... Heh, heh... Anyway, Saint Sunlight Sect is in danger..."

Then he sighed.

"Could it be..." The man from Saint Sunlight Sect looked at Han Bingxue's clothes and felt his coldness and casualness. He was suddenly enlightened. He was even more respectful. He said, "Master, may I recklessly have a guess that you... maybe you are the Mortal Ice, the Unique Star of North... Master Han?"

Han Bingxue blandly smiled and then nodded, as if he felt that the young man was still hopeful. He said, "You do have a pair of sharper eyes than the others..."

That young man was thrilled. He even felt flattered. He said, "That's flattering! I happen to know about your name by coincidence That's all..."

Han Bingxue spoke blandly, "Oh? Coincidence? Wu Huitian doesn't seem to be a man without gratitude. At least... At least he remembers what I have done for him in the old days and he let somebody else know about it too. Hmm. I am glad."

In fact, none of the disciples knew about anything about him helping their Prime Master at all.

That young man just made a blind guess according to the clothes and posture of Han Bingxue.

He knew nothing about how the senior master helped their Prime master in a difficult courting.

The disciple knew something totally different from what Han Bingxue was telling! He didn't know that Master Han from Wu Huitian.

However, Han Bingxue said 'Wu Huitian doesn't seem to be a man without gratitude', so the young man dared not to deny it.

Well, he decided to just let it be this way!

...

Chapter 954: Strong Fellowship

"Master, you are right. Our Prime Master never forgot your help in the old days. He has always been grateful. He mentioned it countless times in front of the disciples... He said he had just met you a few times, but became a close friend to you. He always tells us to make friends like you, who has a kind and generous heart. We stay with insincere people for a whole life only to find them a stranger, while sometimes we become good friends to somebody we just met because of his kindness and generosity. Master, you are the latter," that disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect spoke with respect.

Ye Xiao was surprised and impressed. [What is going on?]

[Han Bingxue is talking nonsense, making up stories. How come you guys even helped him with it? Aren't you humiliating your Prime Master? You actually believed him just because he said those words? What? Is this real?]

"Hmm. Wu Huitian is a man with conscience... I never regret to be friends with him. He remembers me, and I never forget him!" Han Bingxue said and sighed. "We used to fight together... It has been too long since we last met... Time flies... We are all old. The old days kept reliving in my head. It all feels like yesterday... I am old, both physically and mentally..."

"Master, you look young and energetic. You talk with warmth and gentleness. We can all feel your kindness. If we don't know who you are, we may think that I am even much older than you..

That disciple hurriedly flattered Han Bingxue.

Han Bingxue nodded and went on sighing...

Ye Xiao was having a bad time trying not to laugh. He even felt stomachache because he tried too hard.

[You are truly a bragger expert.]

[The men of Saint Sunlight Sect... They are a bunch of fools... What the hell... They talk like that is true!]

Han Bingxue knew Wu Huitian indeed, but there was nothing good between them at all!

There was only one thought Wu Huitian had in mind about Han Bingxue. He wanted to kill Han Bingxue!

He wanted to kill Han Bingxue even more than to kill Ye Xiao and Jun Yinglian...

Han Bingxue did help Wu Huitian in courting the lady... but not in a good way though... What he did was...

Hmm... In fact, the truth was exactly the opposite to what Han Bingxue just said!

Wu Huitian was crazy about his disciple sister, Ning Pinger, who was also known as Fairy Ning. That was true. However, Fairy Ning loved Han Bingxue, the Frost Sword. She was obsessed... She was crazy for him...

When Han Bingxue was younger, he was such a handsome man. Ye Xiao was only just a little bit more good looking than him. Han Bingxue was a young pretty man who was a womanizer. Different girls showed up on his side one after another... That was why many men hated him...

Ning Pinger was born a beautiful girl. That was why people called her Fairy. However, she was extremely narrow-hearted and biliary. She had a strong possessive desire. Han Bingxue felt nothing for her at all, but the girl followed him everywhere like a sticker...

That was why Wu Huitian was worried. His hair turned silver because of it. However, there was nothing he could do...

One day, Ning Pinger made a plan to set up a girl who was with Han Bingxue at that time, but she nearly killed that girl and ruined her face. Luckily, Han Bingxue stopped it right in time, so the

tragedy didn't happen.

Because of that, Han Bingxue actually became official with that girl who was nearly killed.

Ning Pinger was mad and jealous, but she couldn't do anything. She was helpless, so she started to mentally torture Wu Huitian in that twisted relationship.

Wu Huitian loved Ning Pinger. He had fought Han Bingxue for dozens of times. In the end, whenever Han Bingxue saw Wu Huitian, he would wickedly tease Wu Huitian about it. Wu Huitian always got angry and started a tough fight against Han Bingxue...

Wu Huitian was weaker, so he always got beaten. That was fine. He didn't regret. What hurt him more was that when Ning Pinger knew it, she would beat him up even harder, no matter how badly he had already been punched...

That lasted for a long time till Wu Huitian finally married Ning Pinger. That was not a happy ending though. In the wedding, what happened made Han Bingxue the man Wu Huitian hated the most in his life.

Han Bingxue didn't love that lady, but she had been courting him for a long time after all. On the day of the wedding, Han Bingxue showed up to send his congratulations.

He just thought he should be polite and do it in a perfunctory way. In fact, he did feel a bit guilty about all that had happened. However, because of that, things went wrong... Ning Pinger saw Han Bingxue. She thought Han Bingxue was moved and he had changed his mind. She tore a piece of the wedding dress and wanted to go away with Han Bingxue...

The wedding was in Wu Huitian's hometown. Wu Huitian was a man. He could never endure such a thing. So he gathered the guests, who were mostly his friends, to fight against Han Bingxue.

Most of the guests were the leadership of Saint Sunlight Sect, all

superior cultivators. Han Bingxue showed up to show kindness. He had never thought that such thing would happen!

Han Bingxue had been married for several years when Wu Huitian and Ning Pinger were having that wedding. Han Bingxue had been behaving much more properly after marriage. He hadn't stayed around different girls anymore. In fact, he hadn't seen Ning Pinger for several years. That was a peaceful time they all had lived. Ning Pinger finally agreed to marry Wu Huitian, but on the wedding day, she actually changed her mind and wanted to leave with Han Bingxue just because she saw him!

That was killing Han Bingxue!

It was also killing Wu Huitian!

That was the biggest humiliation in Wu Huitian's life!

That day, Han Bingxue was soon put down. He was seriously injured. Lots of wounds were left inside his body. Finally, he escaped after being hunted by so many cultivators. Wu Huitian kept chasing Han Bingxue like crazy. He just couldn't let Han Bingxue live. Ye Xiao went by and saved Han Bingxue, otherwise, there wouldn't be Frost Sword in the realm!

...

Chapter 955: Useless Son?

After that, Ye Xiao, Li Wuliang, and Han Bingxue fought back together. Three superior cultivators captured Wu Huitian and beaten him up hard. Han Bingxue thought that Wu Huitian was a victim too, so he decided to let him free. Otherwise, they should have killed Wu Huitian and sent him home...

In the end, Wu Huitian still married Ning Pinger. Nobody knew what was between them.

That was the story.

It was such an absurd story. Wu Huitian successfully married the woman he loved, but he still couldn't forget the humiliation...

Han Bingxue actually didn't do anything, yet he had been hated by Wu Huitian all the time. He was nearly killed by him. However, he let Wu Huitian go with mercy... But Wu Huitian didn't just let it go... Han Bingxue surely wouldn't just let Wu Huitian keep plotting behind him...

That was how things went to an unchangeable situation...

Han Bingxue was still the pain in Wu Huitian's ass. However, Wu Huitian became Han Bingxue's biggest enemy too. When he heard that the three factions killed Ye Xiao and Li Wuliang, he was suffering great pain in the heart. He hated Wu Huitian more.

He had regretted. He thought he could have saved both of them if he could be cold-hearted enough to kill Wu Huitian back in the old days.

Back to the present, now he had a chance to tease the biggest enemy, so he certainly wouldn't let it go!

"I still remember the days... Your Prime Master Wu, Lady Ning and me, we three were close friends. We used to go on a trip together... Ah, the old days... It was like yesterday..." Han Bingxue shook his head and walked ahead slowly as if he was reliving the

memory.

Ye Xiao just stayed aside, pretending to be someone unimportant. He pulled the horse and waled behind Han Bingxue. He was so impressed. He had to admit Han Bingxue's capability.

Han Bingxue was good at making up stories, yet he was also good at adding truth into his stories! He was lying!

Wherever Han Bingxue went, Ning Pinger would follow. Wu Huitian would definitely follow Ning Pinger... Thus, the three of them did have a trip together... They always showed up in the same place...

Ning Pinger would even hold Han Bingxue's arms. That was true. Whenever she got a chance, she would stay as close as possible to Han Bingxue. Han Bingxue was holding well on not to touch her, otherwise, he should have done the deed with Ning Pinger for lots of times!

They were close friends indeed. Ning Pinger always thought that Han Bingxue loved her in the heart and he was just too shy to express it. She had a good point. Wu Huitian was staying with them all the time. Even if Han Bingxue liked her, he wouldn't say it in front of others. That was why things got so miserable on Wu Huitian's side...

"... By the way, what are you doing here? Quite a lot of people you are?" Han Bingxue finally asked the question. He said, "Is anything wrong?"

"We do have a problem," that disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect hesitated and said.

He was sure that this Frost Sword was their Prime Master's good friend, however... He wasn't sure if he could tell him what they were doing in this place. He was hesitating.

Moreover... even though he had confirmed Han Bingxue's true identity... he didn't have one hundred percent trust in Han

Bingxue. After all, it was such a coincidence that they were two men and a black horse...

He thought maybe... they were exactly the two men they were hunting.

He couldn't trust anybody while he was on such an important mission.

[Even though he is Prime Master's friend, it doesn't mean he is definitely innocent.]

[After all, as it is said, Han Bingxue and Xiao Monarch are good friends too. Xiao Monarch is dead... That's true... What if he is Xiao Monarch's brother? He has been missing in the world for two years. Who knows what he has been doing in the two years...]

[All things have reasons. People say it for a reason. Maybe it is true.]

[However, he seems quite friendly to us. He doesn't seem to hate us. Is it just a rumor?]

[It must be. He looked so sincere when talking about the story between him and Prime Master. It shouldn't be fake!]

"What is it?" Han Bingxue frowned and spoke arrogantly, "Look at you, like you are trembling in front of some horrible monster. Do you have enemies around here?"

"Urh... cough, cough..." The man coughed and said, "That's right... It concerns our sect."

Han Bingxue blandly said, "Hmm. I see. I guess it must be a rather powerful enemy you are dealing with. Look at you, cautious like this. You are my friend's disciples. I can't just walk away from this. Look... I will stay around for a couple of days. If there is anything I can help, just tell me. I will help if you ask."

He blandly smiled and said, "If I don't help when you ask, Wu Huitian may be mad at me. He will keep nagging me like a childish

wife next time I see him. I never forget how he nagged back in the days. In fact, sometimes I thought about it. However, I don't like it. Haha..."

"Phoo..." Ye Xiao couldn't hold it this time. He laughed.

[Wu Huitian? Like a childish wife?]

[That would be such a joke if somebody else said so. However, Han Bingxue was definitely approved to say that. No matter whether Han was helping Wu Huitian or messing with him, Wu Huitian has always been like an angry woman!]

[No matter what, Wu Huitian will definitely punch you in the face when he sees you next time. How will he not?]

"We appreciate it, Master." The disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect was grateful when Han Bingxue wanted to help. They started to trust him a little more. After that, they looked at Ye Xiao and that man said, "Master, may I ask who this young man is..."

Han Bingxue waved his hand and said, "Haha... He is a younger generation in my family. Hmm... We are all on the same side. I don't think I should lie about this... Hmm. My useless son. What a shame. He is grown up, yet he hasn't experienced the martial world ever... That's right. I decided to take him out and let him experience more. I can introduce him to some of my old friends after all."

Ye Xiao lowered his head and looked embarrassed. He nearly swore out loud!

[Useless son?]

[Han Bingxue! God damn it! You bloody bastard!]

[I must be haunted by the ghost of unluckiness today. I saved you! Kindly! Pah! You... Wait and see... I am going to kill you, you dog sh*t!]

He was shouting in his heart. He was so angry that he even felt a

bit dizzy.

[Han Bingxue, I didn't know you have become so bodacious...]

...

Chapter 956: Afterwards Accountability

After Han Bingxue said those words, the disciples of Saint Sunlight Sect were understanding. They started to become trustful to Han Bingxue.

However, they were thinking, [It is said that Frost Sword is always cold and indifferent, like ice. Why is he so nice today?]

[Oh, right. He is taking his son out today.]

[That makes sense now. His son needs to be in friendly relations to others after all. He is trying to make good connections for his son today.]

[He doesn't want his son to be bullied...]

[To be friends with people like us, disciples of the three factions, is the best way!]

As they expected...

Han Bingxue continued, "Guys, my son will walk this martial world alone someday. If he happens to meet any of you, please... take care of him for me."

He said it.

The men felt relaxed. The disciple who did the talking said, "Sure thing, Master. Don't worry. Anything your son needs, we will do our best."

"Hmm. Thanks." Han Bingxue nodded and said as if speaking in a higher position.

"May I ask you one thing, Master..." The man gritted his teeth and said, "Back to the old days... About Xiao Monarch... It is said..."

That was a sensitive topic. The other disciples were all nervous. They nearly jumped ahead and held the man's mouth.

[What if the rumor is true... You may get us all killed in this

place...]

[You are talking to a super master level cultivator here! Are you insane!]

[You idiot!]

However, every one of them took a breath of relief. They all wanted to ask this question and now some idiot was doing them a favor. They were going to know which Han Bingxue was standing before them after all!

Han Bingxue's face turned dark when he heard it. He didn't say anything.

Suddenly, it became awkward. Nobody felt the harmony anymore.

The men were all nervous, showing pale faces. Even that talking disciple, who was in level one of Dao Origin Stage, suddenly felt like choking.

He regretted. [Why would I ask that? They all want to know the answer. Why me? Why would I say it out?]

[It seems it is true. Han Bingxue is a good friend to Xiao Monarch...]

After a while, Han Bingxue finally said something, "About that... Do you think you can ask me that? I will talk to Wu Huitian about this soon. I guess two years doesn't mean enough for this... Humph!"

Then he waved his sleeves and left, showing a cold face to those men.

Ye Xiao hurriedly caught up.

The disciples were relieved. They finally got to know the truth.

[Hmm. Han Bingxue and Xiao Monarch are friends. However, I guess even though he is close to Xiao Monarch, but he is even closer to our Prime Master...]

[He seemed sad when I mentioned this...]

[It has been two years since he last showed up. That shows his attitude!]

[No matter what, it is obvious Prime Master is more important than Xiao Monarch in his heart!]

"I was being stupid... Master..." The man regretted.

He shouldn't have asked such a sensitive question. Even though Han Bingxue wouldn't blame him, his Prime Master would never go easy with it...

"Humph." Han Bingxue humped and sighed. "Things happen in the storms of the martial world. Nobody can be absolutely loyal."

He sounded sad. It seemed there were all kinds of emotions hidden inside his heart that he couldn't tell—emotions he had long buried inside his heart.

Everybody sighed when they heard Han Bingxue sigh with sorrow like that.

Then he stopped talking.

The men of Saint Sunlight Sect walked Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue away with respect. They kept giving them food and drinks, and they even made a feast for them. Even when they were eating, Han Bingxue still looked sad and gloomy, like he was lost in some painful memory.

After the feast, the over a dozen disciples called for thirty more men to respectfully see Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue leave. The two of them waved their sleeves and left...

When they disappeared in the horizon, the disciples finally sighed with relief.

"So that's Han Bingxue... He is powerful indeed... as people say..."

"It scared the shxt out of me back then... Why did he just keep on suppressing on us without saying a word..."

"You know nothing... Brother Ge asked something that none of us should have asked... That was wrong..."

"What question?"

"..."

"Oh See... I mean... Brother Ge... How could he ask that stupid question..."

"That was bodacious..."

"If he was pissed, we might all get..."

"That's right. We were lucky..."

They all felt lucky.

"It's good that Han Bingxue and Prime Master are friends... Otherwise, we are doomed..."

"That's right... Prime Master always has powerful friends..."

...

"Han Bingxue! Stop!" Ye Xiao caught up with Han Bingxue furiously. He attacked Han Bingxue with his more powerful move. It created overwhelming waves that rolled up dust in the entire place, as if he was fighting his sworn enemy in his life.

He couldn't hold the anger in his chest anymore, so when they were out of those men's sight, he started to rage.

Han Bingxue didn't look handsome, casual, indifferent, and arrogant anymore... He hurriedly held his head and ran like a fleeing dog. As he was running, he was smiling and explaining, "I mean... Come on... That's a good stopgap... You know it! You understand..."

"Bull-stopgap-sh*t! You don't need to say that! You bloody bastard! How dare you tell them I was your son..." Ye Xiao was so angry that he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood. "You actually... even... called me... a useless son... You bastard! I am going beat you

up until you become your father's useless son! God damn it!"

If he was still Xiao Monarch in his prime, it would be easy to capture Han Bingxue. It would take him just a few moves.

However, he was weak at the moment. He couldn't reach Han Bingxue, not to mention hit him. No matter what he did, what martial art he used, he couldn't hurt Han Bingxue!

...

Chapter 957: I Got You!

Ye Xiao was getting angrier as he kept failing to catch Han Bingxue! He tried and tried, chasing after the latter, but he still couldn't reach him. He even noticed Han Bingxue was showing a jocose look. He was furious. He shouted, "Fine! You are stronger than me now. You can do whatever you want now. Go away now. Just run. Keep running... I can't catch you. But I can break my ties with you. You ungrateful vile bastard. Let's never see each other again ever!"

[What the hell? Are you serious?]

[Why so serious?]

Han Bingxue was shocked. He stopped and couldn't move. Just seconds later, fists hit on him continually. That hurt really bad.

- Bang, bang, bang... -

"Phooo..." Ye Xiao raged up, "How dare you use spiritual power to resist my fists! It fucking shook me! Stop it or I am breaking my ties with you!"

Han Bingxue was helpless. He said, "Boss... Please... My spiritual power automatically resists your attack... I didn't do anything. You are an expert, so you must know that if I intentionally use the spiritual resisting power, you would be torn into pieces immediately..."

"Fine! You know everything! Just stop your spiritual power now!" Ye Xiao was furious, "Stop it now and stand right here! Let me beat you up and let's call it the end when I feel better! Otherwise, I will never go easy with you!"

Han Bingxue wanted to cry.

[You are too weak to hurt me, yet you actually want me to stop my spiritual power so that you can beat me?]

[Isn't it... shameless?]

[Why don't you just say you want to torture me?]

"What? Are you hesitating?" Ye Xiao looked fierce. He gritted.

"I..."

"Are you stopping it or not!"

"Yes, I am! I am stopping it, alright? Just do it! Come on! Beat me! I give up! I am just dozens kilogram weight. Just do whatever you want on me..."

Han Bingxue was angry but also sad. He gave up.

The next moment, Ye Xiao kicked Han Bingxue and put him down on the floor. He got on Han and started to punch him. As he punched he said, "Just do it? Whatever I want? Good! No problem! I will satisfy you, you prick! Bastard! I have never seen anybody worse! You piece of shxt! You idiot... fool... filthy bastard... You..."

After a while, Han Bingxue didn't look like a human. His head was twice as big as it should be. Even his butt was swollen. He looked just like an inflated balloon...

Hmm... That was rough. He was beaten up so bad!

His heart was full of grudge at the moment.

He was very likely in his worst appearance of his whole life at this moment. He was swollen twice bigger than he should be. Nobody would believe he was that handsome man, Han Bingxue! Things were never predictable in one's life!

Ye Xiao, who just had beaten Han Bingxue like hell, didn't really look good at all. He was gasping. He was exhausted. Han Bingxue was a level nine Dao Origin Stage super cultivator! Even though he had stopped his spiritual qi, he was still too tough. Ye Xiao was only in Dream Origin Stage. He couldn't easily hurt Han Bingxue!

That was reasonable. Back to the old days in the Land of Han-Yang, when he was facing Gu Jinlong, who was totally powerless

like a piece of meat in Ye Xiao's plate, Ye Xiao still couldn't hurt him, even though Ye Xiao had used everything he could try to beat him. If Brother Egg wasn't that good, maybe Ye Xiao would be the dead one instead of Gu Jinlong. Ye Xiao was hundreds of times stronger than before, but Han Bingxue was also way too much more powerful than Gu Jinlong. Han Bingxue wasn't lying. If he didn't try to be beaten by Ye Xiao, he could easily get Ye Xiao killed by just one finger flick!

"I mean... That was so dishonorable... You threatened me like that... Make me stand here to get beaten up... I even have to stop my automatic running spiritual qi to let you punch me..." Han Bingxue was quite annoyed. "That was too overwhelming and unreasonable... Where is justice..."

That pissed Ye Xiao again. He raged up and shouted, "You bastard! Now you learn how I hold justice! Do you think this is easy? Do you think I enjoyed it? If you ever dare to do that again, I won't beat you, I won't shout at you..."

Han Bingxue was pleased. "That sounds great!"

Ye Xiao spoke fiercely, "I will drag you to a crowded town and take off all your clothes!"

"What? Holy shxt! That's vicious! No..." Han Bignxue felt like being stricken by lightning.

"I know. I can't defeat you. I can't even catch you. However, if you dare to run from me, I will break my ties with you right away! It's up to you!" Ye Xiao smiled wickedly.

"Damn... Not again. Can't you stop threatening me with that shxt? That's low! Vicious! Filthy! Dirty! Dishonor!" Han Bingxue shouted.

"So what? I definitely will do it! So what!" Ye Xiao stared at Han Bingxue and spoke overwhelmingly.

"I... I... Fine! I give up... I will obey... with all my life! Happy

now?" Han Bingxue looked so sad.

"Good. Let's just forget what happened just now. Hmm... I guess I should leave a mark on you!" Ye Xiao said, and then he hit Han Bingxue's head hard with a fist.

Han Bingxue didn't think much. He just fell down to the floor himself, pretending to get hit really bad. He held his head and looked at Ye Xiao like a young wife. In fact, Ye Xiao could never hit him that hard. He just pretended so to please Ye Xiao.

After a while, Ye Xiao calmed down, so Han Bingxue jumped up and smiled. "Well... Boss..."

"Meow..."

Suddenly, a cat made a gentle sound. A white cat showed up on Ye Xiao's shoulder. It was staring at Han Bingxue arrogantly. It looked lazy. Then it lied down on Ye Xiao's shoulder and started to sleep.

That was so cute.

It had a small body with white fur like snow. It was extremely adorable. Han Bingxue was moved.

Han Bingxue used to be around lots of beautiful girls. He loved adorable things. He was resistless to Erhuo, an adorable cat!

"Oh. Boss, since when have you started to like little cats? Oh... What a pretty kitty. I am surprised. You actually started to raise a pet. What a beautiful creature..."

Han Bingxue laughed and then reached his hand to Erhuo with two glowing eyes. "Come on, kitty. Hug, hug. Ah... Adorable... You little thing..."

...

Chapter 958: Erhuo's Wish

Erhuo rolled its eyes and looked at Han Bingxue arrogantly.
"Meow, meow, meow..."

'Who's this pig head?'

'It is not your fault to be born ugly, but you really should be proud of it. Hmm. Oh I see. You got beaten up real hard. Well, that makes you a loser instead of a pig head!'

'How dare such a loser hug me?'

'This is... unbelievably brazen! You must be having a daydream!'

When Han Bingxue just touched it, its eyes showed how disdainful it was. It looked at him indifferently and then turned around and lied on Ye Xiao's other shoulder.

"Oh? That's fast!" Han Bingxue was shocked.

[Really? A cat? Got away from my hand?]

[This is not an ordinary cat!]

He was curious, so he tried to catch Erhuo again moving his hand like lightning.

He was fast when he tried to get Erhuo for the first time, but it was in the general sense. That was just a casual move. He didn't really try to move his hand any faster. However, it was different this time. He had used a bit spiritual power. He was famous in Qing-Yun Realm for his fast movement skill. Ye Xiao's One Laughter in Skyline might be generally better, but in terms of speed, Han Bingxue was better. That was why he was so confident. Even though he wasn't fully recovered yet, he believed he would catch the little cat. He had used some spiritual power this time after all. He was confident!

Ye Xiao didn't stop him. He just smiled and looked at Han Bingxue. He knew Han Bingxue was going to have some trouble...

Han Bingxue's move wasn't slow, but Erhuo was apparently much faster. As far as Ye Xiao was concerned, he believed Erhuo was much faster than either of his One Laughter in Skyline or Han Bingxue's Traceless Wind! It was much faster! Han Bingxue could never catch Erhuo even if he was in his prime. He was only half recovered at the moment, and he actually didn't try his fastest!

As Ye Xiao expected, Erhuo just casually dodged. It looked even more disdainful and impatient now.

[What's wrong with this man? Why can't he just understand it? I don't want to get close to you! Why do you have to touch me? How dare you!]

Han Bingxue missed it again. He was shocked. So he tried again.

This time, he was doing it in full effort. It was just a simple move, reaching out his hand to catch. However, in the entire realm, nobody below level nine of Dao Origin Stage could get away from the grab!

That truly pissed Erhuo!

[What the hell! What are you! How dare you keep doing this again and again? Are you blind?]

- Pah! -

Han Bingxue was so confident that he could catch the cat, but then he saw a dazzling light blind his sight. With a clapping sound, he felt his face burning...

[What the hell? What is it?]

He couldn't believe what just happened. He looked at the cat on Ye Xiao's shoulder, who was looking back at him disdainfully. He just felt blank at the moment.

[I didn't catch the kitty... And I actually got...]

[Slapped!]

[The cat actually slapped me!]

[And I couldn't get away!]

[I couldn't!]

[I didn't get away! I didn't know it was coming! I got slapped before I noticed it was going to slap me?]

[There is a cat... a cat that can actually slap a man!]

[There is a cat that is actually so fast!]

[Is it still a bloody cat?]

[How is a cat so unbelievably powerful?]

He opened his eyes wide. He was stunned. He couldn't believe it. He didn't want to believe it.

"Boss... Your... Your c..." He held his cheek and looked at Ye Xiao.
"Is it... Is it really just a cat?"

Ye Xiao was quite delighted in his heart, but he tried not to laugh. He said, pretending to be serious, "What? Does it look like a... dog to you?"

Han Bingxue was speechless.

He slowly reached his hand to Erhuo again. He looked at it without even blinking. He wanted to catch every tiny movement of the cat. He wanted to know how the cat moved even faster than himself.

When he just reached out his hand, Erhuo's fur all stood up. It suddenly arched its back high, staring at the hand that was slowly moving close to it. It was purring.

That was an obvious warning.

[If you dare to reach your hand to me again, I will attack it!]

After all, Han Bingxue saw Erhuo for the first time, so he didn't understand what that meant. He thought the cat was just fine. He thought everything was going well. He felt good that his hand approached Erhuo little by little.

[You're going to be caught, little thing.]

The next moment, when he was still enjoying his imagination, he suddenly felt utterly painful!

Erhuo actually stuck out its claws like a shadow in an astonishing speed, that stunned Han Bingxue. - Puff! - It scratched the back of his hand.

"Ah... Oh..." Han Bingxue never knew it could be so fast, so his hand got scratched really hard. The back of his hand was ruptured and it was bleeding. He exclaimed.

Maybe it was too far away from his expectation. He was more surprised than hurt. Even though it wasn't truly badly wounded, he, a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator actually exclaimed!

"Meow!" Erhuo shouted. Then it looked at Han Bingxue curiously. It wasn't curious because he got scratched. It was surprised that this human...

[He can speak cat language? What? That's interesting! Maybe I should pay more attention to this man. Why didn't I notice it? He has such talent!]

[That was definitely a cat word he exclaimed...]

It looked at Han Bingxue, and then...

"Meow?" Erhuo looked at him curiously.

Han BIngxue, "Shhhh..." He was inhaling because of the pain on his hand.

"Meow?" Erhuo frowned. [What? Is that snake language too? Or is he just fooling me?]

"Ah?" Han Bingxue looked at Erhuo.

"Meow?" Erhuo was a bit impatient now.

Han Bingxue looked innocent. He was confused.

"Meow, meow, meow..."

Erhuo tried to talk to Han Bingxue with cat language. It was so interested that a human could understand cat language. Ye Xiao could only understand Erhuo though mind connection.

It was not oral communication.

That was why Erhuo was so interested in the exclamation Han Bingxue just made.

Han Bingxue kept his eyes opened, staring at the proud little cat. He was a bit lost.

...

Chapter 959: Beaten By A Cat

"Meow?" Erhuo was impatient. It was not curious now as it started to glare at Han Bingxue. [Why is this man so stupid? I admit that it is quite impressive that you can speak cat language. But I am talking to you, lowering my own position! That means I am trying to be nice to you. Why do you pretend to be mute?]

Then it meowed again. That sounded like questioning this time. However, no response. Han Bingxue was still blank.

Ye Xiao nearly passed out because he laughed so hard. He looked at Erhuo and Han Bingxue, who were exactly like two fools talking to each other. In fact, Han Bingxue couldn't understand a word!

Erhuo's name actually meant a fool. Han Bingxue was totally another Erhuo!

After a long time, Erhuo was pissed. It didn't get any response at all.

[Damn it! I am being so nice! You actually wouldn't even respond! Aren't you disgracing my honor! I have to teach you a lesson! I have to make you know who is the boss!]

It just started to do it when it had the thought. Once again, it started to move in that extreme speed that was beyond human sensation.

- Shoot! -

It was already on Han Bingxue's 'pig head'. Its four small paws instantly scratched the latter's hair, which he had just combed. Then it grabbed some of his hair and started to pull and pull and pull...

Han Bingxue was stunned. He didn't even have time to react. It was a sudden attack. When he realized what was happening, he raged up furiously. He started to reach his hands over his head.

Erhuo kept jumping on his head, moving incredibly fast and traceless. No matter how Han Bingxue tried, he couldn't touch it. What happened was that his hair started to be dragged off and fell to the floor...

Han Bingxue kept waving his hand over his head but still couldn't touch anything. He finally got serious, so he operated his spiritual power with an all-out effort. He was still trying to catch Erhuo over his head. However, it only made Erhuo move faster and faster... That was all...

Hmm... Not only that...

- Bang, bang, bang, bang... -

Han Bingxue was totally freaked out. He began to be reckless. He couldn't control the power and speed of his hands. He waved it much faster, but Erhuo was too fast. He was helpless, and his hands started to hit himself on the head. That was rough. Within just seconds, he had hit himself over seventy times... That brought dozens of lumps on his head...

"Ah... What the hell!" He was a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator after all. He was stronger than normal people in emotion control. He suddenly stopped the fury in his heart. Maybe he was hit too hard and he finally gave up. He awkwardly sat on the floor and begged in a whimper, "Brother... Boss... I was wrong... I made a mistake... Boss... Please... Take this thing back to you... Please... I won't do that again..."

That sounded so dolorous, painful, and piteous...

Erhuo was still jumping over his head, pulling off his hair...

[You pig head! You stupid pig head. How dare you... What? You want to bewitch me? No way!]

Ye Xiao was the only person who knew exactly what was going on. He laughed so hard that he was gasping. That was delightful for him.

Han Bingxue, who had treated his appearance more important than his life for half of his life, got fooled by a cat. He was in a mess. That was such a wonderfully shocking and dramatic scene...

"Erhuo, stop it now." Ye Xiao felt that it was enough, so he shouted at Erhuo.

"Meow..." Erhuo sounded cheerful like a victor. It jumped off Han Bingxue's head and waved its paws to Ye Xiao, and then looked at Han Bingxue disdainfully. In the end, it arrogantly looked aside.

It wanted to say, 'This guy is a useless trash! I won't waste much time on him.'

Ye Xiao laughed so loud. The anger had all been cleared from his heart now.

Han Bingxue was the one who felt unhappy. He waved one hand and a mass of snow fell to the floor. The snow started to form into a mirror and he looked into it to see himself. That hurt. He exclaimed in pain when he saw the face of himself...

"You bastard... You fucking vicious cat... Ahhhhhh..."

He found that there was not much hair left on his head. And his face, which should be handsome and beautiful, was full of scratches. Over a dozen lumps were on his head.

"Look... I just don't want to waste our time on you... It isn't worth it..." Han Bingxue kept talking to Erhuo hostilely on the way afterwards. "If I wanted to beat you, you'd become a pile of meat and blood now... You are just being ignorant..."

"Meow, meow, meow, meeeeow..." Erhuo waved its paw. [I just don't want to bother. My claws waved and you would have died. Even if I could only scratch your face, you should have lost one eyeball right now...]

Han Bingxue shouted in anger while he was combing his hair and curing the lumps. However, he couldn't get back the hair on the head in a short time. No matter how powerful a man was, he could

never boost his hair growth. That was weird though. Nobody knew why not. These were all understandable. He just didn't understand some things, just like why the scratch on his face couldn't be removed.

He always liked his own face, which was the face of a handsome and beautiful man. Now he was hurt so bad...

Erhuo was the peerless spiritual creature in the universe. It got some real sharp claws.

If Erhuo didn't want Han Bingxue to be cured on the face, no matter how powerful he was, he would only have to wait till it was naturally fixed.

Erhuo was still in its initial stage. If it was a bit older and more powerful, it could easily make those scratches permanent on his face. If so, Han Bingxue would have to accept that he was utterly disfigured.

However, he was recovering in a normal rate. That was already so lucky!

"Boss... You are incredible... Look at you cat. It's unbelievable. You are the boss..." After a while, Han Bingxue finally looked better. He said to Ye Xiao with an ugly face full of scratches.

[Who would even think that I, a level nine Dao Origin Stage master cultivator, would be beaten up by a cat...]

When he was thinking of this, he felt even more sorrowful.

...

Chapter 960: Crow Mouth

"You can mess with anybody, but not with this little thing! You deserve this though. You took advantage of me earlier, and you think you are the best. Good. What now? Behave yourself now?" Ye Xiao smiled. He was gloating.

"You just got beaten up by a cat... Hahaha..." He laughed and said, "Han Bingxue, do you know what this means? You are worse than a cat... Haha..."

Han Bingxue's mouth was tilted and his eyes were blue. He was going to get crazy.

What Ye Xiao said was the truth.

Even though he wanted to argue, he couldn't. He got beaten up so hard by a little cat, yet the cat was fine. What could he say?

What could he say?

Ye Xiao felt delighted and he started to move ahead on the horse.

Darky looked at Han Bingxue and neighed. That was sneering. It was obvious. It was laughing at him loudly!

That's right. Darky laughed like a human... with its mouth wide open...

[This man actually dared to mess with my boss?]

[Humph. He is lucky to be alive!]

"Damn it! Your cat bullied me. And even your horse is laughing at me! I can see it! The horse is actually laughing... I see it clearly!" Han Bingxue was shocked. He kept his mouth opened and pointed at Darky. He was shaking.

He was totally shocked...

"Why... How come... After he returned to life, he became so mysterious... His cat is like a devil... Even his horse is so weird..."

Unbelievable... I can't... believe this..."

Ye Xiao humped and squinted at him, an ignorant man.

He thought, [Mysterious? Humph. There are lots of things you aren't aware of yet...]

They got back on the road. Han Bingxue behaved himself this time.

Ye Xiao knew that Han Bingxue didn't want to make any noise on the road. He just didn't want anybody else to see his face at the moment. If somebody saw him right now, he would rather kill himself!

Oh. He was just that narcissistic!

When they walked to a mountain pass, suddenly, they, including Erhuo and Darky, all looked up to the sky in the distance.

The clouds were rolling in the sky. They felt an overwhelming suppressive qi rolling over to them.

"Who is it?" Ye Xiao said. He and Han Bingxue were both alerted. "Whoever it is, this is such an overwhelming power!"

Han Bingxue looked serious. He said, "Boss. That's not an ordinary man... That must be one of the 'monsters' people talk about..."

Ye Xiao nodded.

Even Xiao Monarch in his previous life was much weaker than that.

Whoever it was, that was even much stronger than the Thunder, Wind, and Cloud, three grand elders!

Only if the three of them fought together could they compare to this man!

That must be one of the most powerful figures in the realm.

The three grand elders fighting together could fight against Wu

Fa, the No. 1 cultivator in the realm!

A thunderclap sounded loudly, and a mass of dark cloud flew over to them.

When they just saw the cloud, it had already flown about a thousand meters behind them. In the cloud, they saw the silhouette of a person. Whoever stood on the cloud was wearing all black, standing proudly on the highest point, looking down upon all lives in the realm.

It felt like a beauty.

It fleeted over them within a second!

The entire place was suddenly filled with extreme coldness!

Even though Ye Xiao had been used to staying in the cold, he still felt chilled!

"That's Great Elder Xuan Bing..." Han Bingxue took in a deep breath and widely opened his eyes. "Xuan Bing has been notorious recently? What is she going to do? All the big sects were devastated by her now. Who else could have messed with her again? No matter who it is, they must be unfortunate!"

Ye Xiao wasn't quite interested.

For him, Xuan Bing had nothing to do with him. He hadn't even met her before. In his previous life, he was arrogant. He was weaker than Xuan Bing and Xuan Bing was a lady, so he wouldn't want to be teased by others. That was why he hadn't met her, and he wouldn't want to meet her at all. Life could be easier for him that way.

"Come on, let's go. It's not our business. If it is, she should have come down to us now..." The cloud was going further and further away. Han Bingxue was still murmuring about something. Ye Xiao urged him to hurry.

However, something happened. They just felt dark in the sight

and then the dark cloud actually flew back to them, moving down to them.

The suppressive qi was moving down to them.

Han Bingxue exclaimed and then dragged Ye Xiao out dozens of meters away, so as to get away from the suppression.

When they both just stood on the floor, a mass of dark fog appeared in front of them.

There seemed to be a person inside the fog, but they couldn't see the face.

They didn't know whether it was a man or a lady. They couldn't even tell whether it was tall or small.

The only thing they were sure about was that the suppressive qi was from this person!

Xuan Bing was back! And she got down to them!

Han Bingxue nearly cried.

He stared at Ye Xiao and thought, [Bloody heavens. Boss, you shouldn't have said that! She did come down to us now...]

[You have such a crow mouth [1]. It must be a max level crow mouth.]

[She is here now. What do we do?]

Ye Xiao was surprised too. [What the hell? We have no connections by any means... Why did you come down? Because of what I just said?]

[Are you trying to scare us to death?]

In the dark fog, Xuan Bing rolled her eyes and looked at Ye Xiao, then she also looked at Han Bingxue. Suddenly, she was emitting a huge mass of murderous qi rolling up to the sky!

Han Bingxue was totally frightened. He didn't hesitate as he hurriedly stood up straight and operated his full spiritual qi as if he

was going to have a tough fight next. He was ready to die fighting.

However, both Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue knew that they would definitely die if they had to fight this legendary figure, Great Elder Xuan Bing, no matter what they tried!

However, the fog just kept floating in front of them. For a long time, nothing happened.

The murderous qi stopped and then rose up again and again. It seemed Xuan Bing was hesitating about whether she should kill them or not.

...

[1] Crow mouth, refers to person who made an inauspicious remark that would eventually come true.

Chapter 961: Weird Attitude

They were confused, but neither of them dared to say anything. [Is this Great Elder Xuan Bing going to just stand here?] No matter what, they could only stand there with her. Any reckless moves could get themselves killed!

Han Bingxue took a deep breath and suppressed the fear in his heart. He stepped ahead and said, "Please forgive us, lady. I am Han Bingxue. We didn't know you would come, so we didn't greet you. However, I don't understand. Why are you standing in our way?"

Even if he had to face Wu Fa, the best cultivator in the realm, he would still look cold and indifferent, not to mention Xuan Bing. In fact, he was ready to have a tough fight and die for it.

[Brother Ye is too weak. He could barely survive the energy effect from her attack. I am the only one who could withstand it!]

[If Xuan Bing starts the fight, I will have to give my life to fight for Brother Ye's survival!]

He was fully alerted. After he asked the question, Xuan Bing finally spoke in the dark fog.

However, when she spoke, she sounded like she was trembling, but then she pretended to be cold and fierce.

"Hmm... Han Bingxue? You are Han Bingxue?" Xuan Bing sounded indifferent and she seemed teasing him. "It is said that the Frost Sword Han Bingxue is one of the most beautiful men in the realm. Why do you look like this? Isn't it a pain in the sight?"

That hurt. That was Han Bingxue's weak point at the moment. He never thought that Xuan Bing would tease him like this. She was such a great figure after all. His face turned pale and he said, "I got scratched by a cat. So what?"

"By a cat? All the bruise on the face..." In the dark fog, Xuan Bing said, with her voice sounding like she was trying not to laugh.

"There is a story in the Qing-Yun Realm. There was an official. He was good at both martial art and literature, a handsome man with great talent. There was barely any flaws on him. Only thing that might be his shortage was that he feared his wife... Someday, his face got scratched by his wife. The next day, his colleague asked, "What's wrong with your face?" 'Scratched by a cat...' Answered the official."

Xuan Bing told the story about an official, but in fact, she was teasing Han Bingxue.

What she wanted to say was 'You got scratched by your wife! Henpeck!'

Han Bingxue's face turned to the color of pig liver. He furiously said, "Good story! Brilliant! Elder Xuan Bing! I never knew the great Xuan Bing, who could shock the entire realm, is actually an amusing person! Impressive..."

He was teased by a lady, so he couldn't stay sober because of the anger. He regretted just after he said the words. That was Xuan Bing, the great Xuan Bing he was talking to. She teased him. That meant she was being kind. At least she didn't show any hostility. However, what Han Bingxue said was satirical. He was asking for death!

However, Xuan Bing actually just smiled. She sounded a bit hoarse though. She said, "Han Bingxue, this young man who stands beside you... he..."

She didn't know what to say after that.

Her voice sounded in the fog. Ye Xiao heard it and felt confused.

[I absolutely never heard her voice.]

[But... Why do I have a familiar feeling of her?]

[Why?]

[This is impossible!]

Ye Xiao was sure he had never seen this Lady Devil of the realm ever!

Not even once!

However, he felt familiar with her. That was weird.

"This is my brother!" Han Bingxue humped, "What's the matter?"

Xuan Bing's voice sounded again from the dark fog. She said blandly, "Oh, your brother..."

It seemed she was relieved like she could finally stop worrying.

Then she stopped talking.

Han Bingxue was confused. [What's wrong with her? What does that mean? Does she even know what she was talking about? She laughed at me, saying that I am a henpeck! Now she asked about Brother Ye and felt relieved after she got the answer. Wait. Does she like me? And she thought Brother Ye and I are... couple?]

[That's world-shaking!]

Han Bingxue was incredibly narcissistic. That was for sure.

Ye Xiao was different. He was just confused about Xuan Bing's attitude. So he asked, "Great Elder, have we met?"

Xuan Bing stayed silent for a while and then blandly said, "No."

Then it was coldly silent for a while!

Ye Xiao didn't know what to say next. Han Bingxue was still having his incredibly narcissistic thoughts. Xuan Bing was staring at one man, the man who didn't notice at all!

The three of them just stood there. Han Bingxue felt it too weird to stay so quiet. [What's wrong with Xuan Bing? Why is she... The attitude... Isn't it... Unbelievable!]

Ye Xiao was confused too. [What's going on?]

Xuan Bing didn't leave, but she didn't seem like staying. She was

quite overwhelming, but also cold and indifferent. It seemed she wanted to fight, but she didn't move...

What did she want?

"Han Bingxue, where are you heading?" After a long silence, Xuan Bing asked a question that nobody thought she would ask.

Han Bingxue was surprised. [Why would she care about where we are heading? And she just asked me?] He said, "We are going to Town of Ye."

"Town of Ye?" Xuan Bing was confused, "Town of Ye of the Oracle District in the north?"

It was too late for Han Bingxue to change his answer. He said, "That's... right... That's it. We are going to... to find... a medical material. Hmm. That's it."

That was obviously a lie.

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes. [Bastard. You don't even know how to lie.]

[That's obviously made up. Xuan Bing is going to be mad. Can't you just refuse to tell her anything? Why did you lie?]

...

Chapter 962: Go the Same Way

However, things were beyond Ye Xiao's expectation. Xuan Bing heard Han Bingxue and actually nodded before saying, "Hmm. Town of Ye. Good. There seems to be some special medical materials in that place. It could be a good choice."

Han Bingxue opened up his eyes widely, staring at the dark fog and not knowing what to say.

[What? That's it? She believes?]

[Is there truly rare medical materials in Town of Ye? I just made it up... I didn't know... Are you sure?]

Han Bingxue was totally lost.

He couldn't understand why this famous Lady Devil of the realm was so easy to deceive.

Suddenly, he had a smashing thought. [Does she... like me?]

Xuan Bing stayed quiet for a while and then said, "It is such a coincidence. I am going to the Oracle District too. We met here because destiny brought us here. Han Bingxue, we are going the same way. How about I go with you two?"

She spoke indifferently, "We may need each other's help on the road after all."

Han Bingxue was stunned.

[What? Bloody hell!]

[That sounds familiar! Does she really like me?]

It was not a good excuse. Han Bingxue was familiar with this kind of excuses. Back in the old days, when he was staying among different girls, lots of girls used such an excuse to stay on his side. He was once very popular. Wu Huitian's wife, Ning Pinger was the one who always 'coincidentally' went the same way with him. However, Xuan Bing was the Lady Devil of the realm! He couldn't

believe she would use such a... horrible excuse!

[Is it too obvious?]

[You? Powerful as you? You need help on the road? What a joke!]

[She likes me?] Han Bingxue was lost in thoughts. [If she likes me, how do I refuse her? I can't hurt her feelings... I don't dare to... I am a married man...]

Ye Xiao felt it was unbelievable too when he heard Xuan Bing. His eyes nearly popped out of the eye frames.

[This... This is absurd!]

He wouldn't be so surprised if Xuan Bing just got over and killed them both.

[You are from the north flying to the south earlier. You even have flown over us and returned when you noticed us.]

[Now you are telling me we are going in the same direction?]

[What part does this look like the same direction?]

[Are you trying to fool us or to fool yourself?]

"Well..." Han Bingxue was anxious.

[A god-like figure asked to be our travel companion... That's too much suppression!]

[Staying with this lady is like staying with a huge bomb!]

[Who knows when she will get mad and slap us both to death instantly!]

[At the very least, if she likes me and wants to do something to me... I have no choice but just let her do whatever she wants!]

[Oh my heavens!]

[I am a man with principle...]

Again, Han Bingxue was such a narcissistic person... Unbelievable...

If he said what he thought...

He would definitely have a miserable ending that nobody in history could ever imagine...

Han Bingxue was showing a bitter face and murmured, "We have some private matter to do over there... I don't think... I don't think you should come with us..."

Xuan Bing coldly responded, "Of course it is a private matter. Me too. What? You think there is any official business in this world?"

Han Bingxue was speechless.

He looked at Ye Xiao asking for help in the eyes. [Come on, Boss. I can't handle this. Can you do it?]

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "Well... Urh... Lady... Men and a woman... That's not convenient... Why don't you..."

Xuan Bing seemed smiling. She blandly said, "Really? I don't think so. What? Are you going to make any trouble for me?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and stopped talking.

[We make trouble for you?]

[We will never dare to do that, not even if you feed us bear heart and leopard gall!] [1]

[But you will make trouble for us! You are our biggest trouble!]

"Cough. Well, since you insist. That is very kind of you. Let's go together then." Ye Xiao was a decisive man indeed. He knew she was never going to change her mind, so he said yes.

Besides, she was obviously going to stick with them. What else could they do if they didn't say yes?

Did they dare to say no? Did they dare to fight?

Could they? How dare they?

Han Bingxue looked at Ye Xiao with his eyes full of grudge. He was complaining in the heart, [Come on Boss. How could you say

yes. Do you know what will happen after this...]

[Maybe I am going to lose my chastity to her...] He kept imagining how he 'had to' accept Xuan Bing...

[Oh. This is sad.]

Ye Xiao looked at him and showed a bitter smile. He wanted to say, 'I can say no. As long as you can drive her away, I will change my mind at once...'

Han Bingxue was showing a bitter face.

[If I can drive her away... do you think I would be like this now? I would have swept off the three factions long ago...]

Xuan Bing's eyes blinked. She was lost in thoughts, [What is going on? He has just come to this world for sure. He did improve a lot, but he is definitely much weaker than Han Bingxue.]

[Why is he making decisions? Why does he look like a leader?]

[Han Bingxue couldn't make the call, and he did!]

[This is odd.]

The decision was made. The three of them were going to go to the north together. Han Bingxue had to accept it. He spoke in a bitter face, "Lady, we are both weak. We can only go by foot. Look at you... You..."

He looked at the dark fog and twisted his lips.

[Those who know her might understand we are traveling with a lady. Those who don't... will definitely think we are with a ghost...]

"Easy." Xuan Bing thought for a while and then the dark fog suddenly started rolling and shrinking. In the end, a slim lady was revealed.

Xuan Bing was wearing all black. She was tall and had a slim body with a perfect shape. There was a layer of black silk covering

her face. Nobody could see her face. She was wearing a bamboo rain hat on the head, which nearly covered her eyes.

"What about now?" Xuan Bing said.

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao were both surprised.

[What about now?]

"Good! Can't be better. Let's go..." Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and smiled bitterly.

...

[1] To eat bear heart and leopard gall is an idiom, means, to brace up; summon up one's courage; to be bold, audacious, foolhardy.

Chapter 963: Too Amorous

It was so weird when the three of them traveled together.

Even the air seemed to be awkward.

Ye Xiao was thinking all the along the way about what the lady exactly wanted. He barely talked.

However, Han Bingxue didn't stop talking.

For him, this powerful lady must have fallen in love with him...

He was quite sure. Although Ye Xiao was such a handsome young man, but Han Bingxue knew he was the cold Xiao Monarch deep in the heart. Ye Xiao would never be interested in any women, unlike him. He believed Xuan Bing must be obsessed for him!

It was forgivable that he had such thoughts. After all, it happened to him too many times before this. Wherever Frost Sword was, there were always eyes full of erotic love staring at him.

However, Ye Xiao was always the one who hurt the girls! He was such a prick in Han Bingxue's heart! It made Han Bingxue feel proud that Xuan Bing liked him. However, he was also troubled. He didn't know what to do.

[It is sometimes such a trouble to be handsome and kind. I am a married man. But this lady, she loves me. She is such a great figure in the world. I know I should just turn her down, but I can't deny the pleasure in my heart.]

[I am upset. It is a crime to be handsome like me...] He sighed, but in fact felt pleased.

All along the way, he was being energetic and debonair. Surely, he didn't dare to do anything reckless. He wanted to be a good husband after all. He thought it would be better to just be a best friend of Xuan Bing. That was what he wanted. Maybe there could

be ambiguity between them, but no further than that. He would definitely turn her down if Xuan Bing asked for more.

[I, Han Bingxue, am not that kind of man. Besides, I haven't seen your face yet... What if you are an ugly woman... That is absolutely a no.]

"Well, Lady Xuan Bing..." Han Bingxue walked with his chest up and showed a gentle smile. "Do you feel tired, after traveling for so long?"

If he wasn't doing this with a pig head, but his true face, he must be dashing. That could definitely attract lots of girls.

However...

Hmm. He could attract none!

His hair was scratched so bad that he looked like a man with favus on the head. His face was full of scratch marks. Now, he wanted to show a handsome look, but only made people laugh.

He seemed to forget about it though. He thought he was still a man with a beautiful face, and all girls in the world would be obsessed for him. He was just so narcissistic. That only made him look more hilarious.

Ye Xiao nearly freaked out when Han Bingxue was being pretentious.

[What are you doing? Why do you have to do such a pretentious thing?]

Xuan Bing looked at Han Bingxue through her hat and spoke indifferently, "Han Bingxue, do you think the reason I asked to join you is that I like you?"

"Urh... Urh..." Han Bingxue was surprised.

Ye Xiao was shocked too, even though he was still in thoughts.

[This Xuan Bing lady is so frank. She just said it... That's impetuous...]

"No, no, no... I didn't mean that. No, I didn't." Han Bingxue felt awkward being questioned like that.

[Even though you do like me, I won't just say it. I don't want to embarrass you. You are a lady. I don't want you to be angry because of love...]

"Humph." Xuan Bing humped and stared at Han Bingxue coldly. She spoke blandly with disdain, "Just stop the stupid tricks that you use on little girls. You can be narcissistic, I don't mind. But don't go too far. Stop being a swaggerer now! Do not be too amorous! If you dare to have any amorous thoughts again, I will kill you!"

Suddenly, a murderous qi raged up like a storm.

Han Bingxue's face suddenly turned pale. He was totally frightened.

He had only one feeling. 'I am never able to resist it. My life is in her hand.' He was scared and started sweating.

He was surrounded by that murderous qi. He couldn't even move a finger, just standing still right there.

"Humph!" Xuan Bing humped and then stopped the qi. Han Bingxue finally took a breath and was free to move. He stepped back a few steps with fear in his eyes.

He knew that he was much weaker than Xuan Bing, but he was level nine of Dao Origin Stage after all. He never knew there could be such a huge gap between him and Xuan Bing!

He was a well-known figure in the realm after all...

Now he knew it. He and Xuan Bing were like from two totally different worlds! She was like a cloud, while he was like dirt on the floor!

[To fight her face to face... To risk my life to fight her... To try my best to earn time for Brother Ye... Those are nonsense... As

long as she wants me dead, she only needs to flick a finger.]

Han Bingxue looked pale on the face. He was utterly scared in the heart.

[How is there such a horrible monster in this world...]

[I actually thought she liked me... That's... I just felt the qi she let out. And I knew, I was being unreasonably amorous.]

[How could she like me? That is... I am just like a stranger on the road in her eyes.]

His self-pride was hurt...

[How is it possible?]

He stayed away from the lady sneakily. That was embarrassing.

He could still feel her cold and sharp eyes staring at his back with murderous intents. It was like a barb stabbing his back. That was unpleasant...

No matter how shameless he was, he felt utterly embarrassed and shamed at the moment...

[Ah. I have been around lots of beauties. This must be my retribution...] He was comforting himself and then he felt fine about it after a while.

...

Chapter 964: You Liar!

Xuan Bing was walking gracefully, leading the way. Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue followed embarrassedly. Han Bingxue just got embarrassed, so he decided not to talk much. Ye Xiao naturally wouldn't say anything useless.

For Ye Xiao, even Han Bingxue, such an experienced playboy was shamefaced, he could never be able to handle that. Besides, he didn't like a powerful woman like Xuan Bing!

Su Yeyue and Bing'er were both soft and tender. Ye Xiao liked them. He wouldn't like a tough woman!

However, unexpectedly, even though he didn't want to talk to Xuan Bing and he even tried to stay low, Xuan Bing didn't let go of him.

She slowed down a bit and then walked with Ye Xiao side by side.

That was normal. It wouldn't make Ye Xiao feel uncomfortable, but it made Han Bingxue feel like walking on needles. He didn't want to walk with them at all.

It showed lots of problems of him though.

"Ahem... I guess it's better I walked ahead to lead the way." Han Bingxue rubbed his nose and wanted to leave them.

He had to. He felt so uncomfortable staying with Xuan Bing.

[She is definitely trying to drive me away.]

Xuan Bing looked at him and didn't say a word. Ye Xiao looked at him and stayed silent too.

Han Bingxue accelerated to lead the way. [I thought at least one of you would say something to stop me and we may be able to still walk together, with laughter and talks. That must be better. I won't feel alone.]

[Well... I guess I really should go away.]

[I don't want to get myself killed.]

Han Bingxue walked ahead and stayed hundreds of meters away in the front. He finally felt safe from Xuan Bing's suppression. He was relieved. He murmured, "Bloody hell. What wrong have I done? I got hunted and nearly died. I got beaten by my dear bloody brother and by his pet too. Now a woman keeps suppressing me like this. Heavens... Please... give me mercy... It hurts..."

Behind him.

Ye Xiao was in thoughts while they were walking. [Xuan Bing wants to talk to me. What... does she want to talk about?]

[What is she going to say?]

[What can she say? What does she want?]

He was lost.

[She was definitely heading the opposite way, then she changed her mind and asked to come with us. Why? What for? She doesn't like Han Bingxue. Then why would she do this?]

Ye Xiao couldn't believe Xuan Bing did this for him. Even though he knew he was a handsome man, he believed Xuan Bing, such a great figure, would never be attracted by a man's appearance!

Xuan Bing said they were going the same way and they could help each other on the way. Ye Xiao didn't believe a word of it.

[Help?]

[For whom?]

[You are such a powerful figure in the world. Nobody dares to mess with you. Why would you want any help from us?]

"What's your name?" Xuan Bing suddenly asked.

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was surprised. He answered, "I am... Ye Jun."

"Humph!" Xuan Bing suddenly got angry. "You liar!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He was speechless.

[You have never met me. I am sure you do not know my name. Why do you call me a liar? Besides, this is the first time I met you. It is reasonable that I keep my name a secret to you. Why should I tell you my name? How could I?]

"Just say it. What's your real name."

Xuan Bing asked.

She sounded cold without any emotion, but Ye Xiao could feel that she was smiling.

He could even feel that she was happy.

Ye Xiao was lost.

[What is this? Is this normal? What's wrong?]

[No way! Isn't it weird?]

[What the hell is going on here?]

"Hmm... my real name..." Ye Xiao decided to tell her another name. "Well... My name is Ye Chongxiao..."

"Nonsense! You are not Ye Chongxiao!" Xuan Bing seemed angry. She spoke coldly, "I don't understand. Why can't a man just bravely say some truth? Are all men the same like this?"

Ye Xiao was totally lost.

[What the hell?]

[Why? How come she seems to know me well?]

[Why is she so sure about this?]

[She actually said 'Why can't a man just bravely say some truth? Are all men the same like this?' That's weird... She is complaining something... Why?]

Ye Xiao thought for a while and smiled bitterly. "But that's my real name."

"You!" Xuan Bing looked at him angrily through the hat, as if she

was going to swallow him alive.

Ye Xiao rubbed his head and looked innocent.

He was telling her, 'I am telling you the truth but you don't believe it. I don't know what else I can say...'

However, that innocent look of him only made Xuan Bing even angrier. She just wanted to kick him down to the floor and beat him hard. She wanted to punch him hard and ask, 'Are you sure you are Ye Chongxiao? Are you sure you are not...' She just felt so awkward and angry.

She thought, [Humph! Others might know little about you, so most of them will be fooled by your lies... But I know everything!]

[You actually lied about your name in front of me... Idiot...]

However, after a while, Xuan Bing started to smile. [Fine. You want to play the game? I will play with you. Let's see how it goes.]

"Fine. Let's say you are Ye Jun," Xuan Bing said.

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was lost.

[What? Now it's fine that I am Ye Jun?]

[What the hell? What are you?]

[Didn't I tell you my name is Ye Chongxiao? Why do you... Why do you accept my most false one?]

[This is... This is so confusing. Please, sister, what do you want?]

...

Chapter 965: Freaked Out

"Kiddo, you must be young, right?"

While they were on the road, Xuan Bing looked at the rocks on the road and asked Ye Xiao.

"Hmm. I am." Ye Xiao touched his face. [Come on. Look at my face. Everybody can see I am young.]

He didn't mind that Xuan Bing called him kiddo. He was in a body that was only eighteen years old. In fact, even in his previous life, Xiao Monarch was just an older kiddo for Xuan Bing!

"Nineteen? Eighteen?" Xuan Bing asked.

Ye Xiao felt it so weird that she kept asking such simple questions. He touched his nose and said, "Hmm. Eighteen."

"But you look no older than seventeen. Why do you pretend to be older? You think that would make you look mature? Look. You are just a kid!" Xuan Bing wrinkled her pretty nose and said behind the silk mask.

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was speechless again.

[She is right. I am seventeen.]

[But... seventeen or eighteen... So what? What is her point?]

[You are the powerful Lady Devil in the realm... Do you have to stick to such a question?]

[And by the way... Why do I have to be a kid? What part do I look like a kid?]

[Why are you so sure I am a kid?]

"Kiddo, it hasn't been long since you came to this world, right?" Xuan Bing asked.

"It has been quite some days now. Almost one year..." Ye Xiao cautiously answered.

"Why are you full of lies in your mouth? Kid! It has been about half a year!" Xuan Bing spoke for certain.

Ye Xiao was totally lost.

[Holy heavens. What's wrong with this woman? What is wrong? Why does she know it so well?]

[Why do you ask me if you know the truth?]

[If you have any questions, fine, but can you ask something that matters?]

[Fine. You are a powerful figure. I will answer your questions. Why do you have to question my answers? I am full of lies?]

[What... What the hell is wrong with you?]

[Do I know you? Do I have to be honest with you?]

[Besides, why did you ask me if you know the answer? Why do you have so much leisure time to do such a meaningless thing?]

He felt that he didn't know this world now. In fact, he felt he didn't know women at all... [You are one of the most powerful figures in the realm. Why do you have to talk about such trifles...]

Ye Xiao felt like he was going to freak out soon.

"You have been in this realm for only half a year, yet you already reached level seven of Dream Origin Stage... You are a talented man," Xuan Bing said.

"I am flattered, Senior." Ye Xiao was trying to be humble.

"Senior? You called me senior? Do not call me senior, you idiot!" Xuan Bing turned over and got angry at him. "Do I look old to you? Am I that old?"

"Urh..." Ye Xiao was breezed.

[People call you Senior, because... you look old?]

[What... does that mean?]

[What else do you want me to say? Can I just call your name?]

[Come on. Maybe I should call you great great grandmother according to your hierarchy position!]

"Urh... Great Elder Xuan..." Ye Xiao was worried. He immediately changed the appellation. He still felt awkward.

"Do not call me that either!" Xuan Bing was going to freak out.

Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and didn't know what else to call her.

[Not this not that! What do you want me to call you?]

[Grandmother?]

Luckily, he was just calling it in his mind. If he said it out and called her grandmother, he might get punched to death immediately!

Suddenly, it felt so awkward. They both didn't say a word after that and just kept walking. After walking hundreds of meters ahead, Xuan Bing murmured, "You can call me..."

Then she stopped. She just stopped.

Ye Xiao was curious, so he asked, "What?"

Xuan Bing glared at him and fiercely said, "Whatever you want to call me!"

"Urh..." Ye Xiao twisted his mouth. [Whatever I want? That seems great... But... What exactly should I call you?]

"Great Elder Xuan..."

"Are you deaf? What did I say? Do not call me that!" Xuan Bing shouted fiercely.

"Senior..."

"Are you out of your mind? Can't you learn? Didn't I tell you not to call me Senior?" Xuan Bing freaked out.

Ye Xiao freaked out too...

"Please, just tell me what should I call you with..." Ye Xiao helplessly asked.

"Just call me whatever you want," Xuan Bing repeated.

Ye Xiao just wanted to kill himself.

[Whatever I want? Are you sure? Screw whatever I want... That is not whatever I want at all!]

[Are you going to drive me crazy...]

[I can't defeat you, and I don't dare to piss you. Otherwise, I would have punched you hard!]

[I know I can never defeat you. Otherwise, I will put you down on the ground and spank your butt. I will ask you, 'Not this, not that! What on earth do you want? What do you want me to call you? Do you want me to call you mother! What? Dear wife?']

[Pah! Whoever marries you must have done lots of sins in his previous life. That's why he has to endure you in this life to pay his debt!]

[Women are so difficult to get along with! Women are the most difficult entities to understand!]

Ye Xiao gave up. In fact, Xuan Bing was a bit freaking out.

[It is a problem though. What should he call me?]

She didn't know either.

Senior or Great Elder made her look too old. She just couldn't accept it. She just wanted him to call her something that didn't refer to age. He should have picked one from lots of appellations. She didn't understand why he was so stupid about this!

[Fine. Just leave the problem to him. I just want to make trouble for him but do not want him to suffer... I want to hurt him a bit, but not too much... Ah... What's wrong with me...]

[I am confused!]

"Well... Miss Xuan..." Ye Xiao kept thinking for a long time and finally figured it out, so he decidedly said it.

His hands were full of sweat because of nervousness...

He just felt so weird.

He was calling a world-shaking, powerful, and murderous female cultivator... Miss...

[Oh... Heavens...]

...

Chapter 966: You Are Fooled

Ye Xiao just felt it so weird to call her Miss.

It sounded like he was satirizing her by calling her that.

However, the truth was, he was shocked again.

After he called her Miss Xuan... Xuan Bing didn't feel annoyed at all. She didn't stop him. She didn't get mad at him.

[Oh?]

[Does it mean... She accepts it?]

Ye Xiao felt relieved. [It seems this Great Elder Xuan Bing is a weird person. How weird!]

If Han Bingxue were Ye Xiao, he would definitely believe Xuan Bing fell in love with him.

However, Ye Xiao was not Han Bingxue. He was just a stupid young man with no such kind of experience.

No matter how narcissistic Ye Xiao was, he wouldn't believe this great female cultivator would fall in love with him.

That seemed to be the biggest joke there ever was in the world!

It remained a question in his heart though. [Why? How come? There must be a reason for this?]

Xuan Bing, a woman who suppressed the entire realm, before whom nobody dared to gasp heavily, actually allowed Ye Xiao to call him Miss Xuan, such a weird appellation. That confused Ye Xiao for a long time.

"Ye Jun, what's the relationship between you and Han Bingxue?" Xuan Bing squinted at Ye Xiao as she slightly bit her own lips.

"Ha. We are brothers. Sworn brothers," Ye Xiao answered cautiously.

"Liar! How could you? That's ridiculous!" Xuan Bing wasn't being

polite.

Ye Xiao freaked out once again.

[Heavens... Dear sister... grandmother... my great grandmother... Please... Do you have to call me a liar every time after I answer your question? Can I ask you something? What should I say to stop being a liar to you?]

"You have just come to this world not long ago. Han Bingxue is not a good man, and he is known to be always alone. Besides, he is so much more powerful than you. Why would he recognize you as a brother? Sworn brother?" Xuan Bing was confused. She looked at Ye Xiao and said, "There must be a reason that you don't want to tell me!"

"Well..." Ye Xiao rubbed his head and said, "I don't know. I am sure he is my brother anyway!"

"Ah. You are new to this martial world. You don't know how vicious a man can be in this world. Maybe he just stays with you for some evil purpose. He may be flattering you so that he can get something he wants from you. I believe there is nothing you have that attracts him, but maybe something that is related to you attracts him... Otherwise, why would he be your brother? Kiddo, you are naive like other kids. Just a few simple words and you are persuaded. I am afraid you may get yourself sold by him!"

Xuan Bing was just having a guess, but as she said so, she felt it more and more possible. Finally, she concluded, "Han Bingxue is a bastard. He must have some unspoken purpose to stay with you. He is not truly kind to you! I am sure!"

Ye Xiao opened his mouth but couldn't say anything.

It was true. Normally, Han Bingxue had no reason to be brothers with a young man who had just come to this world for half a year—someone who was weak like an ant compared to him.

Except if Han Bingxue was crazy, or he stayed with the young

man for some unspoken purpose!

Han Bingxue was surely not crazy. There must be a reason that he would be a brother to the young man.

Xuan Bing was having a strong point on this.

Maybe Ye Xiao had something, or he was related to something that Han Bingxue wanted!

However...

That was not the truth. This was not a normal circumstance...

"He is married, so he wouldn't want you. Well, maybe you are a trace that leads to some secret treasure?" Xuan Bing continued guessing, "Or maybe you know where a priceless treasure is hidden? Maybe you can lead him to some secret place? To a mysterious super powerful figure? There must be something he wants!"

"Anyway, he gets close to you because he wants something that he can't tell you!"

"You idiot! You must be fooled!"

Xuan Bing gave a conclusion.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Han Bingxue? Fooled me?]

[Does he dare?]

[How dare him?]

[This is...]

[I can't explain this to her... I can't tell her I am Xiao Monarch, Han Bingxue's boss...]

[If I say so, the most possible thing that would happen to me must be... Xuan Bing waves her hand and turns me into a pile of flesh and blood instantly!]

As Xuan Bing was speaking, a mass of murderous qi slowly rose up from her body. She blandly said, "Han Bingxue the bastard. He actually dares to lay his filthy hand on you... Hmm... a young man who has just arrived to this realm. That is nasty and vicious. He is unforgivable... He deserves to die..."

Then she was ready to do something. "Wait here. I'll catch up with him and kill that filthy piece of shxt! How dare he... How could he... Humph... How could he do this! He disgraced all cultivators in the realm!"

That seemed to be a righteous reason. She was about to attack Han Bingxue—she was about to move ahead and kill the man who 'disgraced all cultivators in the realm'.

That was such a death crime... She had to kill him for this...

Ye Xiao was frightened. He didn't have time to hesitate anymore or to think about how weak he was to stop Xuan Bing. He just went over and opened his arms to stop her. "Stop! Stop! It isn't like what you're thinking! Han Bingxue and I, we are definitely sworn brothers! We are brothers..."

"I am not being emotional. I am sincere. I mean it... Miss Xuan, thank you for your concern. Han Bingxue has no malice to me. It's true!" Ye Xiao was sweating because of anxiety. He tried to convince her.

He knew that it was so easy for her to kill Han Bingxue. It was just as easy as waving her hand.

If he stopped her any bit later, he might lose his brother forever. Han Bingxue might become a cold dead body under Xuan Bing's attack. He might even lose his soul and completely die.

...

Chapter 967: Good Fortune In Love Affairs

Xuan Bing was confused. She looked at Ye Xiao. "I have to suspect that you are bewitched. Why do you speak in defense of him? You have just come to this world. Even if you met him the first day you came, it has been no more than half a year. How could you become his sworn brother? Did he use some psychic technique or some special magic to control your mind? I have to figure it out!"

Then she prepared to get to Han Bingxue again.

Ye Xiao hurriedly stopped her again. He said, "Miss Xuan, please. I know you are nice to me. But... we are fine! When you spend a full life with someone, he may still be a stranger to you, but sometimes, when you see somebody for the first sight, you may become best friends! That's us. We are brothers! We are enduring brothers! It's true!"

Xuan Bing was surprised. "Enduring? Are you sure? Just think deeper about it. What if he wants to do something to hurt you and I am not by your side? Think about it. You are too weak to fight against him. He can easily make you beg for death."

Ye Xiao was anxious. He started to sweat. "I just love to depend on it, alright? I swear with my life! Han Bingxue will never hurt me!"

"Humph." Xuan Bing humped and then stopped the murderous qi. She blandly said, "Fine. There is still a long time before I left. We will stay on the same way after all. Let's see what Han Bingxue truly wants from you!"

Ye Xiao held his forehead and felt speechless.

Han Bingxue looked back at them from far away. He seemed a bit excited.

He didn't know that he almost died in Xuan Bing's hand. It was so close that he got wronged.

He had no idea how easy it could be to get himself killed instantly...

If Xuan Bing did attack him, she wouldn't even let go of his soul. If she killed him, she would destroy his soul too! He would be thoroughly dead!

"There is a small town over there. We can have some food and rest for some time," Han Bingxue shouted excitedly. He knew nothing.

Ye Xiao looked at him embarrassedly.

[Brother, you have no idea how I have saved your life again...]

"Kid, you are new to this world. You lack of experience. You barely know enough of many things in this place. Just be careful. It is difficult to draw a person's skeleton. So is to know a man's heart. It is a good saying that men become friends for the first sight. It mostly happens in dramas. There is no such thing in this realm."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "You are a talented man. You are unique in this realm. I don't want to let you die here..."

"The first thing you have to know is that this world is totally different from where you come from." She kept speaking to him while they were walking.

Ye Xiao kept saying yes. He didn't know what else to say anymore.

[This woman is too self-righteous. The most annoying thing is that she keeps teaching me like I need it...]

He was confused too. [Why would Xuan Bing care for me? She seems sincere!]

[Great Elder Xuan Bing... She is a great figure in the world who would kill until the sky turned red.]

[I never heard that she actually cares for anybody.]

She said she didn't want a talented man to die in this world. Ye Xiao wouldn't believe it.

That was totally a lie.

Was a talented cultivator special in Qing-Yun Realm?

Not at all.

There were lots of super talented cultivators, geniuses, and peerless talented men!

Everyday, in every hour, lots of talented men die in this realm. They all became rotten bones. However, nobody had ever heard Elder Xuan Bing would save any of them...

[Why is she so nice and caring to me?]

He couldn't understand it. Why would such a thing happen to him?

It was a long way ahead of them. He figured he should say something instead of keeping the awkward silence.

He just couldn't keep the presumably second most powerful cultivator of the realm talking...

What if it pissed her as she didn't get any sincere response and casually killed him by waving her hands.

But what could he say?

He thought for a long time and then got enlightened.

He finally thought of something that might explain why Xuan Bing knew him so well!

"Great Elder X..." As he just started to talk, Xuan Bing glared at him. He hurriedly changed it. "... Miss Xuan... Ahem... There is something I didn't tell you. Elder... Miss Xuan, you are from Misty Cloud Palace. In fact, I am friend to your sect..."

Ye Xiao smiled.

"Oh? You and our sect?" Xuan Bing was curious. She looked at

him and said, "How come?"

"Hmm... There is a girl in Misty Cloud Palace. Hmm. I have to admit, all the ladies in your sect are beautiful and gentle, who are hospitable..." Ye Xiao smiled.

Xuan Bing's face turned dark immediately as he said so.

[What?]

[A girl? Beautiful? Gentle? Hospitable?]

She suddenly wanted to put him down on the ground and beat him hard!

[You bastard! How dare you talk about other girls in front of me... Bodacious...]

[And you actually talk with all those compliments...]

[Humph! Which girl?]

Xuan Bing gritted her teeth and spoke with anger, "Oh? So there are lots of beautiful girls in our sect... Who is this special one?"

Ye Xiao was just a rookie in the aspect of love affairs, so he didn't realize anything wrong about this conversation. He said, "Hmm. Yes. There are two girls who are my friends in your sect. They both are beautiful. We actually did have some stories back in the old days..."

[Two girls?]

[Two girls now?]

[And... you have some stories?]

[Bastard! You said one girl, and now it became two... Who knows if there are three or four...]

Xuan Bing gritted her teeth and spoke like she was smiling, "Oh? That means you are popular to girls, right? What a good fortune in love affairs. Hehehehe..."

...

Chapter 968: Rising Jealousy!

He still didn't notice that there was something wrong with Xuan Bing's attitude. He didn't know there was going to be a big crisis on him soon. He actually was still talking about the girls, trying to butter her up a little. He thought he was explaining how important he was to Misty Cloud Palace that he was not just somebody she could casually kill...

"Heh, heh... Don't flatter me... Hmm. The two ladies, one is Bing Xinyue, Lady Bing, the other is Wenren Chuchu, Lady Wenren." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Oh right! Lady Wenren is Lady Bing's disciple. Heh, heh."

Xuan Bing's eyes lit up. She humped and said, "That's true. They are in my sect. What?"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled—his expression showed like he had a great contribution but he didn't want to show off. He casually said, "I met them in the world where I come from. I helped them with some problems, so that we become friends..."

Xuan Bing gritted her teeth and said, "Oh? Problems? What kind of problems?"

Ye Xiao casually said, "No big deal. It's just... There is a small problem with your martial art while you are upgrading. When you try to upgrade Ling Xiao Ice Art, it always gives a reverse impact on you and leaves a threat in your bodies..."

He blandly continued, "I may be weak, but I happen to know a way to solve the problem. That's what I did to help the two ladies back then... It's not a big deal though. Heh, heh. Not worth mentioning."

After all the foreshadowing, he finally said something he wanted to tell her the most. 'First of all, I have helped your disciples. You are their Great Elder in the sect, so you can't requite kindness with

enmity to kill me. Second, I know a way to solve the problem in your martial art. You need me on solving this problem!'

'Now... I guess this can be an easier trip for me to travel with you, right?'

'No matter how cruel you are, you can't bite the hand that feeds you, can you?'

That was what Ye Xiao had in mind.

He finally finished talking and felt proud of himself as he thought he was safe because of his wisdom. Suddenly, he felt suppressed by a huge mass of extremely cold qi that could fill the entire world. Suddenly, he couldn't say a word. All he could feel was coldness. He felt cold in every piece of the skin, as if even his soul was frozen.

He was confused by the sudden change. Xuan Bing was utterly furious. The fire of anger was rolling in her heart.

"Ling Xiao Ice Art? Reverse impact? Help?" she slowly said the words one by one.

Even though her eyes were covered by the rim of her hat, Ye Xiao could feel the sharpness of her eyes.

[Holy heavens! What is going on? What I said is supposed to be life-saving for me! How come it seems to be a death sentence now?]

[This is weird! This is unreasonable!]

"Whirr..." Xuan Bing was gasping heavily. Apparently, she was furious. She couldn't endure the flame of anger inside her anymore.

[Bastard!]

She surely knew about the reverse impact of their martial art.

In fact, she suffered the most severe impact from the martial art!

She nearly died because of it once.

Who saved her?

Ye Xiao!

The guy who was right in front of her!

What mattered the most for her was in what way he solved the problem!

Every time when she thought of how he did it, she blushed like burning.

How did he do it?

After Xuan Bing had that tough fight against Xue Danru and won, she was severely injured and she lost her memory. After that, she became Bing'er, Ye Xiao's maid, who warmed his bed everyday... Ye Xiao did something for her and she was cured before she realized it.

She was even greatly improved and became the second most powerful figure in Qing-Yun Realm...

Hmm. That was not the point. The point was how he cured her!

And he must have done the same thing to Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu!

She knew she didn't need to ask more!

He must have done it the same way...

Xuan Bing felt utterly upset, looking at Ye Xiao, who was talking so casually like he didn't want anything in return after helping others. In fact, she could see that he was so proud and pleased.

She was shaking.

[Doesn't it mean that several of our people were... taken advantaged of by you?]

[And what? You want me to feel grateful?]

Bing Xinyue's master was one generation younger than Xuan Bing... Xuan Bing was the senior master...

Wenren Chuchu was Bing Xinyue's disciple.

"I see. If that's the truth, I guess our sect, including me, have to be grateful for what you did?" Xuan Bing gritted her teeth.

Ye Xiao didn't know that he had aroused the most powerful negative energy in the world!

That was the jealousy of women.

He still casually smiled and said, "It isn't worth mentioning. Not a big deal... Elder... Miss Xuan, you are welcome. We are friends."

[You are welcome?]

[Friends?]

[I am not your friend!]

Xuan Bing was so angry. She nearly passed out.

She kept her hands inside her sleeves trying not to shake. She nearly couldn't help to punch him hard. [You... We... You caused fornication among our sect now... And you... You actually act like it's nothing serious?]

[Who is your friend? Wenren Chuchu? Bing Xinyue? Or Binger? Or... Me?]

[This is... nonsense!]

"Friends? Oh. Our third generation disciple, Bing Xinyue, must be quite close to you, Master Ye," Xuan Bing spoke with anger.

Ye Xiao waved his hand and continued to talk humbly, "No. She is a nice person who is beautiful, elegant, and smart. I will never put myself any closer to her. I did help her, but she also helped me. I am not great. We know each other."

Xuan Bing's heart shook!

[What? What do you mean you know each other? What do you want? Are you going to deny that there is something between you two?]

[You know each other, huh? What is it? Are you going to just walk away after all you have done to her? You did it! You took the advantage of her! And you want to walk away like this?]

[No way!]

...

Chapter 969: Too Much to Do

"You bastard! Help? How could you talk like you are just helping each other? How dare you!" Xuan Bing was furious. "It concerns her virginity! It concerns her future! It concerns the happiness of the rest of her life! Why do you talk like it means nothing? You know each other well, so you don't have to take responsibility for that? Really?"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Hmm... What? What are you talking about? What virginity? What future? What happiness? What? This is... I am confused. What did I say? Responsibility? I didn't say anything!]

"Miss... Xuan..." Ye Xiao was confused. He looked blank. "I guess you must have a reason to be angry with me... But I don't understand... What are you talking about? It concerns a girl's virginity... I guess I have to figure it out. Please just be frank. Just tell me what you are exactly talking about!"

[It was fine. Why are you so angry all of a sudden?]

[I helped your disciples a lot. Was I wrong?]

[Why did you say those terms? What do you mean?]

Xuan Bing coldly said, "As far as I am concerned, what you did to solve our problem is a method that requires the two of you working... together! Am I right?"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What? Where does that come from?]

[Nonsense!]

Xuan Bing stared at Ye Xiao coldly and said, "We have 137698 female disciple in Misty Cloud Palace! How many of us can you save with your interaction method?"

She sounded disappointed and sneered at the same time.

She didn't understand why her master... would become such a filthy man?

He was worse than an animal!

Ye Xiao was stunned by the unreasonable accusation. He suddenly didn't know what to say. After looking at her for a while, he finally raged up and shouted, "Nonsense... Who says it requires that kind of interaction method? It doesn't! You... You are being unreasonable! Where did that come from? How did you come up with such a conclusion?"

He didn't care if she was that powerful monster cultivator or not. He shouted, "That is nonsense! Bullsh*t! Absurd!"

Xuan Bing was shocked.

[It doesn't?]

[No need to have that interaction?]

She seemed to realize something and she stammered, "Does... it not need... interaction?"

Ye Xiao shouted angrily, "Why do you think it needs that? I have no idea how you come to that conclusion! Ridiculous! And they say you are one of the most powerful figures in this world! Pah! You have over 130,000 women! If it needs me to do that to save you all, I will have to die in the bed! That... That's too much for me!"

His face turned pale because of anger. He nearly couldn't breath because of anger. That totally put aside all consideration of her feelings and he looked like asking for a fight.

Han Bingxue suddenly came back to them and looked at Ye Xiao in shock. He couldn't understand why Ye Xiao would rage up like this.

"Boss? What's wrong?" He was confused.

"Nothing! Go away!"

"Nothing! Go away!"

Ye Xiao shouted, and Xuan Bing shouted the same words at the same time. Han Bingxue's fine hair on his skin all stood up in fear. He suddenly felt cold.

At this moment, Han Bingxue was frightened by the shout of Xuan Bing. At the same time, Ye Xiao's spiritual power exploded because of anger. He flew out about a thousand meters.

Although he had flown away a thousand meters from the two horrible figures, he was still so scared that he couldn't help sweating.

[Holy heavens... What is going on...]

[They are so horrible! That's terrible!]

[Xuan Bing is a horrible woman. I knew it. Why is Brother Ye so overwhelming? That's unbelievable!]

"So it doesn't need that kind of interaction..." Xuan Bing was lost.
[Am I wrong? I wronged him? But... I was cured... Why would I get well after... being with him... How to explain that...]

[I did have that 'interaction' with him...]

"Lady Xuan Bing, I think you should better give me a proper explanation." Ye Xiao was angry. "I know virginity is important to you ladies. But I, a man, also care for my own reputation."

He was furious. "I care even more!"

He was so angry like there was fire shooting out from his eyes. He asked, "Where did you learn about that interaction bullsh*t? Who told you that I need that to solve your problems? It can't be just your imagination, can it?"

Xuan Bing looked at him helplessly.

She was freaking out in her heart.

[Where did I learn... I learned it from my own experience... But... I can't tell you...]

[What? You want me to tell you that I am the girl Bing'er who have warmed your bed every night...]

[How could I tell you that!]

She was so upset and struggling.

The only thing she could do was to just look at Ye Xiao, who was so angry and couldn't stop talking furiously... She was lost. It seemed he was not going to stop until she explained it...

[Stop forcing me... What explanation do you want... You have taken all advantage of me... Do you want me to apologize now?]

[Where is justice!]

[How could this happen to me...]

[You are being bodacious by the way!]

[I am one of the most powerful cultivators in this world. How dare you shout at me like this?]

[Do you want me to slap you to death!]

[Is your dignity that important?]

[If you are honorable and innocent, why do you have to be so aggressive?]

At this moment, there were all kinds of emotions in her heart.

If anybody else dared to do this to her, she would slap him to death right away. [How dare an ant shout at me like this? Who am I? A super powerful figure in the world!]

In fact, if somebody else, who was much weaker, wronged Ye Xiao like this, he would also slap her to death right away.

However, that was the problem.

Ye Xiao felt humiliated so badly. [I, Ye Xiao, do you think I am that kind of person who would take advantage of a lady with that excuse?]

[I did help your people! Was I wrong?]

[Why did you humiliate me like that? Why did you slander me? You talked like I am the worse person, the dirtiest, and the filthiest man in the world...]

[I would not bear it!]

...

Chapter 970: Mistake

[This is such a huge humiliation! You have to give me a good explanation! Otherwise, you and me, we become sworn enemies from now on! I... You don't get away from this!]

[You are a great figure in the realm. You are known as the second most powerful cultivator in the realm. So what? It won't be worse than death! A man dies and his c*ck stands up! I don't care!]

Ye Xiao got a really bad temper. He was utterly pissed off and he wouldn't care about anything now. He was exactly like he used to be in his previous life. He wouldn't get so angry if people beat him, shouted at him, even killed him, as long as she was powerful enough.

However, if he was humiliated, even though she was a billion times stronger than him, he wouldn't endure it!

That was his dignity.

That was his bottom line.

He wouldn't let anybody challenge it!

Xuan Bing was actually having a rather weird thought. [He is the man... I like indeed. Proud, haughty, domineering, brave...]

[But... if you don't need the interaction method to solve their problems... why did you... do that to me?]

She really wanted to ask him.

But... she couldn't.

She had to keep it in mind and stare at Ye Xiao... [It seems... if I don't say sorry to him, he wouldn't stop this?]

The jealousy had vanished. Instead, she had a strange feeling in her heart.

"You... this is only the statement of your side... You will certainly

protect your own reputation..." She unwittingly stopped being so overwhelming. However, the grievance filled her heart and she couldn't let it out.

She still didn't want to give in. It seemed she was arguing, but it was so weak...

At this moment, she was not the Lady Devil of the realm anymore. Suddenly, she was like a young wife who had done wrong...

It felt like... she was the maid again, who didn't know what to do facing her furious master.

If Han Bingxue could hear them, he would definitely freak out.

That was astonishing!

The world's strongest Lady Devil, the well-known second most powerful cultivator of the Qing-Yun Realm, was actually soft like a young girl!

He definitely wouldn't believe what was happening...

"What do you mean the statement of my side? How is it only the statement of mine?" Ye Xiao was going crazy. [What do I have to say to make you understand that I didn't molest your people! How much do you want me to explain? I didn't take advantage of them! How do I make you believe that instead of me taking advantage of them, they did take advantage of me!]

[Do you understand?]

[Special interaction method that I take on your people... All the ladies in your sect...]

He thought of such an idea and just felt like freaking out... totally freaking out...

He definitely wouldn't assume that responsibility because he reckoned this Elder Xuan Bing would immediately smash him into a pile of flesh and blood. Besides... [Do you think I can actually do

that? Of course not! I am definitely unable to do that to all your people! Okay?]

"Well... It takes a long time to do that!" He finally started to talk. He must be too angry to stay calm. "It takes at least half a day to do that interaction method... You have 130,000 people... Damn... I... I'll be damned! You... You..."

Xuan Bing's body shook. She blushed. [What is he talking about! Does he know what he is talking about? Is he hit real bad on the head? I didn't do anything to him!]

"Look. Elder Xuan, if you don't believe, go check the two ladies. There are only women in your sect. I believe you know how to check a lady's body. Go check them and you will see whether they have lost their virginity or not!" Ye Xiao was too angry to talk decently. "You wronged me too bad! Do you want me to suicide?"

That was such a sad statement. It was sad enough to make the heaven cry.

Ye Xiao looked down at his crotch and thought, [I... Of course I can't do that... over a hundred thousand women...]

[Even an iron stick may become a needle after having sex with so many women... I may completely vanish after that...]

Xuan Bing was speechless. [Did he just tell me to go check the two disciples' virginity? Bastard... Bodacious... How could he say that! Of course we know how to check it... Don't you think it is too much to say that out...]

Even though she was mad, it was a chance to get out from this embarrassing situation. She waved her hand and acted like she was generous. "Fine. Maybe I was wrong... It was a mistake..."

Ye Xiao was pissed again. "What do you mean 'maybe'? It is a mistake! You are wrong..."

He was helpless though. [A super powerful cultivator in the realm... A powerful lady... Why is it so hard to make her

understand the truth? She is ruining my reputation here! If she tells others... How do I live in the martial world?]

Xuan Bing felt helpless too. [Why can't you just stop this. Can't you just be generous to a lady? I said I was wrong. Do you want me to kneel down and apologize? Or... maybe you need me to warm your bed and apologize in the bed to you?]

"Hmm... It is a mistake... I wronged you..." She sounded even softer.

She wouldn't have thought that she, the Great Elder of Misty Cloud Palace, the second most powerful cultivator in the realm, would say such soft words.

She was apologizing to a young man who was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage.

She couldn't even dream of it!

However, it just happened...

More importantly...

After she said it, she didn't feel it was weird at all...

She was actually a bit scared. She didn't want Ye Xiao to continue being mad at her.

When she felt that fear in her heart, she was speechless about it. [Does the memory of Bing'er really influence me that much? Why can't I just let him bear the grievance? Why do I have to take the grievance?]

[On one hand, I am the invincible super cultivator in the realm; on the other hand, I am just a girl who warms his bed everyday. Do I prefer to be the latter?]

[Corrupt!]

"... Fine. I am a nice man. A nice man always forgives a woman." Ye Xiao took in a few deep breaths and rolled up his eyes.

He finally calmed down, but then he started to sweat.

[Holy heavens... What did I just do?]

...

Chapter 971: Bravo, Boss

Cold sweat soaked Ye Xiao's clothes.

[I... a Dream Origin Stage cultivator... shouted so impolitely and fiercely at a lady... who is much stronger than me even in my previous life...]

[I am still alive! Didn't she just slap me to death?]

He felt a little giddy... [Did I truly... do such a crazy thing just now...?]

[I am impressed by myself...]

Xuan Bing was wearing all black. The big round rain hat almost covered half of her face. The silk mask had been hiding her facial expression. Ye Xiao could feel that this powerful lady was rather speechless.

That was reasonable. As a super powerful cultivator, she got shouted at by Ye Xiao. She must be feeling awkward.

[She must really have the virtue of patience that she didn't slap me to death.]

"I am sorry." Ye Xiao slowly took a breath and said, "It concerns my dignity. I lost control of my self and offended you."

Xuan Bing didn't say anything.

[Your dignity? Do you really care about that? You have... tarnished me... Where is my dignity?]

Ye Xiao took a long sigh and said, "Maybe that is my personality. I just can't let anybody wrong me. Nobody. I just have to reveal the truth."

It sounded like an explanation, but it was more like a self-compliment.

He just couldn't allow himself to humbly apologize; after all, he

didn't really think he was wrong, even though he knew how serious the situation was. He would rather die than exchange for her delight with his dignity.

Xuan Bing stayed silent for a while and then blandly said, "No need for further explanation. I didn't put that in mind. After all, it was me who started this. I made a mistake."

Ye Xiao nodded. "Miss Xuan is such a sensible person. Impressive."

[Sensible?]

Xuan Bing rolled her eyes up in disdain.

She said, "You said you can't let anybody wrong you and you just have to reveal the truth. What else can trigger your abrupt anger? Can you tell me? In case I accidentally say anything that will cause another absurd quarrel!"

Ye Xiao thought for a while and smiled bitterly. He said, "You are such a generous lady. I guess if I answer this question, it will make me look like a narrow-hearted prick. There is one more thing that I can't endure. Betrayal. I hate betrayal the most."

Xuan Bing's body shook again. She didn't respond to his words.

Ye Xiao stepped ahead and blandly said, "In fact, nobody likes to be wronged or betrayed. Me, I hate them. Betrayal. That is a mistake paid with death for me. Whoever betrayed me once will never become my friend again."

"That's why I don't have many friends. Not in the lower realm, or in this world." He blandly said, "I can't stop being afraid that someday, somebody will betray me. The only thing I want from my friends... is loyalty. Nobody betrays me. I won't betray nobody."

"I am full-hearted to all my friends. I won't allow any betrayal! I detest it!"

"This is my philosophy." He smiled bitterly. "It must sound like a

joke. Pardon me."

Xuan Bing sighed and said, "I understand. It should be the insistence of a righteous man."

"It is my insistence," Ye Xiao emphasized it.

He looked at Xuan Bing. For the first time, he felt that this lady behind the silk mask was a considerate person. She didn't seem unsociable like people used to say. At least, he had a much better impression of her now.

If he told anybody about this impression, he might get himself punched to death....

He hadn't experienced the dark horror of her ever! The horror of Xuan Bing was beyond his imagination!

She didn't get mad at him... only because she didn't want to.

She had wronged Ye Xiao. Actually, she felt annoyed about it at the moment.

Ye Xiao looked at Xuan Bing. He couldn't see her face, and he couldn't even see her eyes. However, he could feel her eyes staring at him.

In her eyes, there seemed to be a sense of annoyance, but there was no killing intent.

He didn't feel any suppression from her.

They looked at each other for a short time, and then both of them looked away. They started to walk ahead again.

Not far away ahead, Han Bingxue was quietly waiting for them. He looked impatient and nervous. From time to time, he stretched his neck to look at them.

When he saw them start to walk side by side, he took a breath of relief.

He murmured, "He is indeed my boss. He can actually make peace

to a monster like Xuan Bing... If I were him, no matter how much I was wronged, I would never dare to rage up at her..."

"That may lead to an irrevocable disaster after all."

"However, he shouted at her... He was mad at her... He raged up... And now she is fine. She even looks more peaceful now..."

He was completely impressed!

[That is awesome!]

He even wanted to kneel to Ye Xiao. [Boss, I admire you so much...]

"Miss Xuan, you are such a generous and open-minded lady. You are better than many men. I admire you. In fact, I still have a question that you may need to answer." Ye Xiao said, "I wonder if I should say it now?"

Xuan Bing humped and said, "If you think it is not a good idea, don't do it."

She had been feeling good about Ye Xiao's magnanimousness, until she heard his praise, saying that she was better than men. Was it a proper compliment for ladies? No. Suddenly, she felt annoyed again. That was why she didn't answer him in a polite way!

Ye Xiao was surprised by what she said. However, he just felt that he had to ask her about it. He coughed and then said, "Well... I just don't understand... Why did you think that I need to do that interaction method on your people to solve your problem? I only knew the two ladies, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu of your sect. I never did anything improper to any of them. I am thinking... maybe there is a reason behind your opinion..."

...

Chapter 972: Punching Bag

Xuan Bing's face was burning hot all of a sudden. She gritted her teeth and felt utterly annoyed.

[Idiot! Why do you have to stick on it. Can't we move on.]

[I am speechless.]

[What reason? It comes from my own experience. Even though I was wrong, that I wronged you, you did sleep with me. Why do you have to be so stubborn. What do you want? Besides, why did you call me Elder Xuan Bing? What is wrong with you...]

[Of course I didn't just make it up. But... I can't say it. I can tell you anything except this! This is embarrassing!]

She truly didn't want to tell Ye Xiao that she was Bing'er...

Her thoughts were in a mess. She wasn't ready yet.

However, Ye Xiao asked about it now. She had to answer him. If there was no reason, why did she get mad at him so much?

That would make her an irresponsible and unreasonable person!

"Ahem... Well... You know what..." Xuan Bing thought for a while and said, "Look... I used to read a book, an ancient book, which stated... Ahem... There is a mysterious method... which refers to... ahem... the special interaction art... which can solve the problem of our martial art... And it said that it is the only way to solve the problem... We... We just can't accept such a thing... I... I was reckless. I wronged you. Please, forgive me!"

When she said 'we just can't accept such a thing'... she sounded weaker. She actually apologized sincerely at the end. That was too humble.

[Nobody accepts it?]

[That's true. Nobody would give up their virginity to a man to solve the problem...]

[But... I accepted it... Is it just me?]

At this moment, she was feeling guilty about it. She also felt ashamed. In fact, she was more bashful.

"I see..." Ye Xiao felt relieved.

It wasn't a good answer for Ye Xiao though. However, he knew that it must be difficult for a lady to say something like that.

If he kept sticking on it, it would very possibly make her rage up in fury.

She had been honest and nice to him already, so he thought that he should be respectful to such a super powerful cultivator. She was being so humble now. If he still didn't give up, it would be his mistake. That would definitely be asking for death himself!

As they were talking, they had caught up with Han Bingxue. Xuan Bing hurriedly changed topic. She looked at Han Bingxue coldly and said, "Is there a town over there?"

"Yes, there is." Han Bingxue was a bit surprised.

[Didn't I say it not long ago? Do you have a problem with your hearing?]

However, he never dared to say it out.

After all, he was not Ye Xiao. He didn't have Ye Xiao's courage or his good luck!

"Hmm. Is it a big town?" Xuan Bing was trying to say something in order to cover the embarrassment in her heart.

However, even though Han Bingxue knew it was not an important question, he had to answer it...

As he was about to say something...

Suddenly...

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

People flew over to them one after another in the shadows. They

were fast, spirited, and strong.

The sky was resounding with thunderclaps. Clouds kept rolling in the sky.

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao were frightened. [What? Lots of Dao Origin Stage cultivators again? And... There must be some level nine cultivators among them!]

They both used to be in a higher level than those people. That was why they knew their cultivation levels.

"Han Bingxue!" a voice sounded. It seemed to be full of disdain. An old man who looked like a sage, with white long beards was getting down to the floor from the sky.

However, he looked at Han Bingxue with a vicious look. That ruined his elegant aura.

Over a dozen more men got down to the floor. They all stood in front of the three. Each of them looked at Han Bingxue like a cat watching a mouse.

It seemed they saw Han Bingxue as their toy, which they could play with in any way they wanted.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Well... Lots of familiar faces over there.]

[Eleven of the nineteen of them are easy to recognize. I know them.]

[They all took part in the hunt... against me in my previous life!]

[Ten Great Elders of Saint Sunlight Sect!]

[The leader is one of the three Grand Saint Elders of their sect, who is a peak level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator!]

[This old man is equally powerful to the Thunder, Cloud, and Wind three grand elders together! This man is rough!]

It was definitely extravagant to send so many powerful people to

catch Han Bingxue alone. It was using a chopper to kill a baby chicken. It must be so easy for them to get Han Bingxue. That was why they all looked so casual and confident.

When they looked at Han Bingxue, in their eyes, they were gloating!

Xuan Bing was wearing a black suit and a big rain hat covered her face. When the nineteen men landed, she subconsciously stepped closer to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was surprised. [Is she frightened? The famous Great Elder Xuan Bing?]

He certainly didn't know the truth. She stepped closer to him because she wanted to protect him.

It should be easy for him to realize the concerns from a lady, but since their quarrel had just ended, he didn't think she would care for him like that. Even though they were fine now, that quarrel was still in their heart. He would get to know the truth soon.

Would she be frightened?

Well... Not to mention nineteen people from Saint Sunlight Sect, even nineteen Wu Fa could never scare her a bit. She would most likely start to fight as soon as she could!

She might lose, but indeed, with her magnificent power, nothing in Qing-Yun Realm could frighten her at all...

She didn't feel frightened... Instead, she felt a bit excited... Finally, there were nineteen punching bags in front of her.

The men from Saint Sunlight Sect were going to get in a huge trouble.

[I have been so upset just now. It's like these men are giving me a pillow while I'm extremely sleepy!]

Xuan Bing's eyes were emitting killing intent.

...

Chapter 973: Why Would I Not Dare?

Han Bingxue saw the men. He knew they were all powerful figures, however, he didn't seem to be scared. Instead, he casually looked at the nineteen men and said, "Oh, good friends from Saint Sunlight Sect. Why did your sect send so many people to me? Which dirty corner did you guys come from?"

He always had an annoying mouth. He called them good friends at first, and then said that they were from a dirty corner. What a huge contrast! It could easily piss off the opponents!

That whitebearded old man sneered while looking at Han Bingxue, "Han Bingxue, don't play your stupid game to my people. You must feel successful, don't you?"

Han BIngxue nodded. "Sure I do. It feels so good to hear compliments. You are an expert of kissing ass. You know it is good, don't you?"

The old man was stunned and then laughed wickedly. "Han Bingxue, I guess you have given up on your life now, haven't you?"

If there were only he and Ye Xiao, he would consider retreat. He had no idea if he could even save himself, let alone Ye Xiao.

However, he was quite confident now.

[Humph! We are not just two men. We have another person! She said we should help each other on the way...]

"Since when? Why did you come up with such a stupid idea?" Han Bingxue raised up his nose and spoke arrogantly, "You bunch of stupid filthy eggs! Do you think I need to give up my life now? Look at you? How ridiculous! Stop bragging!"

That white-bearded old man showed a dark face and said, "Han Bingxue, you are a senior cultivator in the martial world after all. Stop talking nonsense to the young generation! Don't you feel ashamed?"

Han Bingxue laughed coldly and said, "Tell me. What should I say? Oh! Do you want me to start killing them one after another? Do you think it's right to do that?"

He humped and continued, "Look. Stop pretending! You know it is not a difficult thing for me to kill them! I am showing mercy to them by teasing them instead of killing them. I am so full of conscience. Why should I feel ashamed? I am honorable!"

What he said surprised all the others.

These men had gotten a message from their disciples about Han Bingxue's trace. That was why they gathered so many people together to come and catch up with him.

They wanted to catch Han Bingxue once and for all.

The young disciples might be confused by Han Bingxue, but the senior ones all knew the truth about Han Bingxue and their Prime Master.

They knew that Han Bingxue was the sworn enemy to Wu Huitian. They also knew how Han Bingxue was close to Xiao Monarch.

Han Bingxue was a pain in the ass to Saint Sunlight Sect.

Han Bingxue was just like Jun Yinglian. They both could sacrifice their own lives to revenge Ye Xiao without hesitation!

Saint Sunlight Sect would definitely kill him as soon as possible.

However, he had been missing for two years. Nobody knew where he was. That was why Saint Sunlight Sect still didn't kill him.

They had suspected that Han Bingxue might be Shadowless Assassin. They could see how familiar they were to each other. More importantly, there were not many people in the realm who were that powerful.

However, they didn't have strong evidence. After all, Shadowless

Assassin had never shown anything exactly the same with Han Bingxue. They just had the suspicion.

No matter what, they wanted both of them dead.

That was why they tried so hard to catch up with him fast.

Han Bingxue seemed to be bragging, but the old man knew he was truthful. If Frost Sword wanted to kill those young disciples, it wouldn't be difficult.

"You won't kill us, because you don't want to mess with our great Saint Sunlight Sect." A slim old man in the crowd stared at Han Bingxue with fierceness and viciousness.

"I don't want to mess with you? What? What a joke! Hahahaha..." Han Bingxue laughed loudly, "Well... I dare cuckold your great Prime Master, guys. Do you think I am afraid to kill some of his men? Wasn't it a degeneration of me?"

As he said so, nobody could get away from a tough fight now.

The white-bearded old man suddenly turned cold on the face. "Han Bingxue, you are a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator! How can you talk like that! You filthy bastard!"

In fact, Han Bingxue realized it might be a little bit too much after he said it. He smiled. "Fine. I was wrong. I apologize. I was talking nonsense. I shouldn't say that. Okay. Let's me make some change. I will kill your Prime Master if I have the chance! I can even dig out your ancestor's graves if I get the chance! Do you think I won't kill a few disciples of you? Do I look like a man living in degeneration?"

"Han Bingxue!"

The nineteen men shouted with anger together. The sky seemed to be shaking.

They shouted at the same time and the earth seemed to have trembled because of it.

The shout was so powerful that it was loud enough to shock the entire world.

In several miles, dust rolled up from the floor.

All animals inside the circle of about ten miles all died bleeding. The water in a river which was over ten miles away rushed up to the sky over hundreds of meters high!

That was such a terrible scene.

Even though Han Bingxue was a powerful level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator, he was astonished!

He was stunned for a while and then returned to himself. He hurriedly looked at Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao had limitless potential, but he was still at level seven of Dream Origin Stage at the moment. Han Bingxue was worried that Ye Xiao might get severely hurt under such overwhelming power.

...

Chapter 974: Troubles to the East!

When he looked at Ye Xiao, he was shocked. Ye Xiao was standing right there, completely fine. He even looked casual.

It turned out Xuan Bing immediately made a power shield that covered Ye Xiao and herself inside. That was why Ye Xiao didn't get influenced by that shout at all. He was leisure.

Deep inside Ye Xiao's heart, he was still a peak level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He wasn't as strong as before, but he was more experienced. That power came out abruptly, so he didn't have time to react. However, after he saw what that shout did to the surroundings, he felt scared. He looked at Xuan Bing with confusion.

[This Elder Xuan Bing... seems caring to me.]

[How thoughtful of her!]

[If she didn't save me in time just now, I would most likely get seriously injured by that powerful shout!]

[I might survive, but I would definitely get hurt.]

"Han Bingxue, no matter what you say, you are a dead man now!" A middle-aged man among the crowd who looked vigorous spoke. He coldly looked at Han Bingxue and said, "You made a mistake by saying what you just said. You won't have a chance to get away from this today!"

He viciously continued talking, "Not only you, but also your stupid son will die for certain."

His vicious eyes had a sense of joy. He said, "Like father like son. What a good swing. Look at him. In such a dangerous situation, your stupid son actually has the mood to flirt with a lady. Haha. Impressive."

"Well, this lady is unlucky to take a fancy to your son... Ha.

Today she will die with him. What a poor couple of the same life. It may become a tragic love story though."

Han Bingxue didn't feel annoyed at all. In fact, he was happy to hear it.

[Haha! You fool! That is exactly what I want to you do! Tease the lady!]

[I was worrying that maybe she would just stay aside and watch me fight. I was having a headache thinking how to draw her into this.]

[I wanted you to mess with her by yourself!]

[Well... After all, she did say that we should help each other. However... there is nothing I can do if she won't do it...]

[If she just leaves us here and goes away, Brother Ye and I will be totally two blank fools.]

[In fact, she doesn't need to do anything else, but just show you guys who she is. I bet you won't dare to do anything!]

[I haven't figure out any practical plan yet, and you started to humiliate her.]

[I... Hahahaha... I like youahaha...]

"There are rules in the martial world. There are rules in the Qing-Yun Realm. We don't implicate enemy's families. It is a principle that has been in this world since ancient times!" Han Bingxue spoke righteously, "I take responsibility for my own! You should come for me. Leave the innocent people alone!"

"Especially the lady. We just met her on the road. We are justing heading in the same direction. She has nothing to do with us. If you leave her..." He sincerely said, "I promise, I won't go away today."

"Hahahaha... I have heard that Frost Sword cares for women so much. I didn't believe it. Look at you. At this life and death

moment, you actually even try to protect a girl. Impressive!"

The middle-aged man said and laughed, "However... Oh, you said she has nothing to do with you two? Hahaha... Han Bingxue, do you believe what you just said?"

Han Bingxue was pissed. "Why not? Am I such a dishonorable man?"

The middle-aged man said, "Of course I believe in Frost Sword's honesty. However, we never planned to leave any of you alive. Do you understand? Everybody who stays with you will die! You all deserve to die! You are bound to die today!"

"Besides, how do I know what relationship you have with this filthy maid? Of course, you will tell us she doesn't know you. Why should I believe it? Maybe she is your daughter-in-law? Maybe she is pregnant? Maybe she is carrying another filthy dog in her? Han Bingxue, you must know we should pull up all the roots. We don't want anybody related to you get to us in the future..."

The middle-aged man looked at Xuan Bing with a vicious look and said, "Besides... look at her, she just stands there, covering her face. She is calm. She must be a cultivator too. Maybe she is your accomplice! You are mice from the same hole! No matter what you are going to say, we will never let any of you go!"

A few others sneered. One of them said, "That's right. You guys are caught up. This place will be your grave!"

The white-bearded old man blandly said, "Han Bingxue, there is nothing you can change now. Just accept your fate! If you have an afterlife, do remember not to be against Saint Sunlight Sect!"

Han Bingxue got angry. "What? Aren't you going to follow the rules that we all have followed for as long as the history exists? Isn't it unreasonable?"

The nineteen men all laughed out together. Somebody said, "We are always reasonable. Han Bingxue, remember this. The biggest

fist is the most reasonable thing. Don't you agree that this is the first rule in this world?"

- Clang! - Swords were drawn out from the scabbards. They were sharp.

Han Bingxue started to sweat. He walked to the front of Xuan Bing and spoke embarrassedly, "Ur... My lady... This is beyond my capability... They are the ones who have the bigger fist. I can't handle this on my own... I think... I have to ask for your help."

[I have done whatever I can. They have abused you with some really nasty words. It's time for me to step aside.]

[It is better to let Elder Xuan Bing do this.]

[I... I guess I should just stand aside and watch.]

[The men of Saint Sunlight Sect? They are going to get broken down... Me and Brother Ye, we have freaked out too many times. It's time for you to taste it. You may never have a second chance in your life to experience this. Well, I guess you may lose your future here!]

He was feeling extremely happy about this.

He couldn't wait to see what would happen next.

He wanted to see the faces of those men once they realized it was Elder Xuan Bing whom they had been humiliated by calling her bxtch, filthy maid, and other nasty words! That must be enjoyable!

Han Bingxue felt excited when he just imagined what would happen next...

...

Chapter 975: Ready to Kill!

Xuan Bing squinted at Han Bingxue and said, "Oh? What have you done? You barely did anything. How do you know you can't handle it? Why don't you go deal with them first? If you fail or die, I will do it myself too, so that, maybe, I can avenge you. It's not a problem. I won't need your appreciation. We are travel companies. That is what I should do."

"I may not help you with that, but I can avenge you. It's not a problem."

"What..." Han Bingxue's eyes nearly popped out.

[What... What is going on?]

[This... This is not my plan. This is opposite of what I planned...]

[Did I... Did I go too far on the jokes...?]

Xuan Bing looked at him, whose sweat was dripping all over his body.

[I am done... This is over...]

Xuan Bing was not Bing'er, the innocent girl who had lost her memory. She was an experienced cultivator who had been living in the martial world for a long time. Maybe she was a bit silly facing Ye Xiao, however, except that, she was a typical experienced old cultivator. Of course, she knew exactly what Han Bingxue was planning. That could never fool her!

[He has been stirring it, trying to draw those men's attention to me. What he wants is to just stand aside and watch me fight against them. Isn't it a perfect plan for him? Well... Does he think I ought to fight for his enjoyment?]

[Do you think you get to watch whatever you want?]

[Well... You could have a chance, but it won't be cheap. Maybe your miserable life is enough for exchange!]

Han Bingxue was totally blank.

When those men saw the arrogant Han Bingxue actually asking the girl for help, they felt confused. [What... Did we mess with a wrong woman?]

[But... she doesn't look like a powerful cultivator at all.]

Then they saw the lady answer Han Bingxue. After that, Han Bingxue looked frustrated. They were spirited. [Oh! Really? There is such tough woman in the world?]

[Well there surely are, but just a few.]

[Jun Yinglian is one of the women who would stand with Han Bingxue. However, she should be wearing white clothes moaning for Ye Xiao. This woman is not Jun Yinglian. Jun Yinglian is powerful, but she should be roughly just as powerful as Han Bingxue. She couldn't help him to defeat us!]

[She is not Jun Yinglian. She couldn't be one of the Prime Masters of the other two great palaces.]

[Well... She could be Elder Xuan Bing, the Great Elder of Misty Cloud Palace, the most horrible woman in the world. She is an invincible nightmare... but she should have gone to the south to fight Xue Danru.]

[This woman shouldn't be Xuan Bing...]

[Who else could she be? Well... She is somebody that we don't have to fear!]

"What is it?" The middle-aged man couldn't help sneering. He looked handsome but had a filthy and vicious mouth. "Han Bingxue, what is that? You know you are going to die, right? Is that why you want to take another sip of the woman's breast? Did she just turn you down? Hahahahaha..."

The nineteen of them all started to laugh in a cheeky way.

In their eyes, Han Bingxue was like a bird in a cage, a fish in the

pond, or a piece of meat in their plate! They got to do anything they wanted on him!

They just felt free to do anything they wanted.

That was why they didn't hesitate at all, but just said anything they wanted without restraint.

They were shameless and fearless at the moment.

However, when Han Bingxue heard that, he wanted to kill that middle-aged man so much.

[Damn! That was good! You have done it right in time, my man!]

[Well, I feel annoyed to hear it, but... I would rather let you say it out...]

[You just go and humiliate Xuan Bing's virginity...]

[What is terrible is not a powerful enemy. The real terrible thing is to have a stupid ally. Their stupid ally has just done something to make me a powerful figure!]

Han Bingxue pretended to be furious. "Shut the fxck up! Is Saint Sunlight Sect famous for humiliating innocent women? Is this your tradition? Do you..."

"Enough. Shut up!" Xuan Bing stepped forward.

Her cold eyes looked through the hat staring at that man who had just insulted her.

She had nearly exploded in fury at the moment.

Even though she knew Han Bingxue was using her, she would love to do it this time.

Because... Ye Xiao... her master...

He was here too.

He needed her help.

[Although he doesn't know who I am, I know who he is to me.]

In fact, since she saw Ye Xiao, she had a feeling that her isolated heart finally found somewhere to settle.

Her heart was finally settled.

That was why she changed her mind, broke the appointment with Xue Danru, and made up a stupid excuse to stay with Ye Xiao.

She didn't even know what she wanted to do. However, she felt happy when she was simply staying with him.

Other than that... when they talked about the reverse impact of her martial art and the special interaction method, she did feel embarrassed and annoyed.

She felt so upset and annoyed in the heart, but she couldn't say anything. That was killing her.

Now the men from Saint Sunlight Sect were asking for troubles, and it was like having a pillow from the sky when she was sleepy.

Those were perfect punching bags for her! She wouldn't let them go!

Besides, they truly had insulted her so badly.

[It's fine if they just humiliate Han Bingxue. They actually insulted me. And what pissed me most is that they called Master a stupid son! That is a death sentence to them!]

[They deserve to die!]

Xuan Bing was ready to kill!

"You! Come over here!" She looked at the middle-aged man and slowly waved to him. Her eyes looked cold and she sounded indifferent. However, it felt irresistible.

The middle-aged man was surprised and then he smiled viciously. "Oh? Me? What is it, slutty maid? Do you like me? Hahaha... Do you think we will spare you if I accept you?"

That was extremely obscene.

Xuan Bing nodded and blandly said, "Oh. Sure I do... I like... your head!"

Suddenly, she reached her hand forward. A mass of dark cloud suddenly appeared and spread out. It was rolling so fast that after just a few seconds, the entire place became dark. The men couldn't even see their own hands in the dark. All of a sudden, thunderclaps sounded everywhere in the sky.

...

Chapter 976: Do It!

All of a sudden, the coldness covered the place. It felt like the coldness was from beyond the heavens descending to the world.

The suppressive power covered everyone immediately.

Before anyone realized what happened, continuous exclamations sounded out.

"Let's do it together!"

"God damn it! She's such a super cultivator!"

An exclamation sounded.

- Bang, bang, bang, bang! -

Every one of the Saint Sunlight Sect people was shocked! They started to fight back.

They were all Dao Origin Stage cultivators. They felt the murderous aura which marched to them.

They felt that it was powerful enough to kill each of them!

The next moment, the dark cloud disappeared.

The sky was bright again.

Xuan Bing was still standing there, wearing her black suit and a big rain hat. It seemed she hadn't move a bit.

However, in front of her, there was a man.

It was exactly the middle-aged man.

The other men of Saint Sunlight Sect were all scared. They looked at Xuan Bing with fear on their faces. Three of them were bleeding in the mouth. That must be some severe injury.

The white-bearded old man's face turned pale too. His right hand was even shaking. There was a wound between his thumb and index.

The dark cloud covered Xuan Bing's movements. The four fastest of the nineteen men were fast enough to react. They all struck at her with their palms.

That was a combat between superior cultivators. Even though the four of them fought against Xuan Bing together, they failed!

They were all injured!

The white-bearded old man was the most powerful among the nineteen men, but he was still injured.

The other three got more seriously hurt.

The injury on the hands was not the most important part. After hitting the four of them on the palms, Xuan Bing was still full of power. She stepped back and casually caught the middle-aged man. That looked so easy.

For the men of Saint Sunlight Sect, they didn't care about any of these. What filled their minds now was that they finally realized whom they were messing with. They had been insulting her for such a long time!

They were so frightened. It was a much terrible disaster for them to know who she was than to get themselves hit!

They might survive the horrible attacks, however, they lost hope when they knew who she was!

"Ling Xiao Ice Art!"

The white-bearded old man's face was like the color of dirt. He checked his own wounded right hand and exclaimed out. His right hand was nearly broken, but that was not terrible enough to make him exclaim. What scared him was that his right hand looked like white jade at the moment!

That meant he was hit by Ling Xiao Ice Art, the special martial art of Misty Cloud Palace!

In Misty Cloud Palace, only one lady could use this martial art in

this way!

Xuan Bing!

The Great Elder Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace!

The nineteen men all felt hopeless when they realized it, as if the sky turned absolutely dark instead of bright.

[This is so f*cked up...]

They had thought about it for a long time and finally reached a conclusion—there wouldn't be any surprises during this confrontation. That was why they were shouting recklessly like that. However, after all the insults and humiliation, they were messing up with a woman whom they feared for the most in their lives!

That was such an indescribable feeling...

They were all lost in the wind. Their heads were blank. They just kept looking at the woman in black suit...

Before this, Xuan Bing had never shown herself in the realm. She always moved inside that dark cloud.

That was why they were so sure it wasn't Xuan Bing. However, they were wrong. At the very least, they believed she had gone to the south for the fight against Xue Danru!

They couldn't understand why she was here!

[What... is going on?]

[Han Bingxue... was planning this all this time... He just wanted us to get into this huge trouble!]

[Even if we are unlucky... this is too much unlucky! We didn't deserve this...]

The most unfortunate person was surely the middle-aged man who was right in front of Xuan Bing at the moment. He didn't look handsome anymore...

His face was pale.

He felt like he was in a nightmare.

It was a horrible nightmare that he could never imagine!

What a disaster!

[I have teased her, insulted her with all I could think of... It turned out I am messing with Xuan Bing?]

[The woman... I fear the most?]

[This is...]

[A nightmare is not as horrible as this reality.]

[Now I got caught. I am right in front of her.]

He did think of suicide. He even made attempts to kill himself. No matter how many times he tried, he couldn't.

Of course, he couldn't. He was under Xuan Bing's control.

To die fast seemed to be luxury for this guy now!

He just moved a little, and Xuan Bing immediately kicked him down to the floor. She lowered her head and spoke blandly, "You have a sharp tongue, don't you? Tell me your name now. I have to know the name of such a capable man."

The man's face was all pale. He murmured, "Great Elder... I... I didn't know... it was you... I deserve to die... I shouldn't have said those words... Ahhh!"

Before he finished it, he exclaimed. His face was cracked.

One of his arms actually started to swell in a weird way.

It swelled bigger and bigger with each passing moment. The arm was showing the color of white jade. After a while, it was as thick as his leg. And it didn't stop yet. The sleeve was breaking. It was still going on...

The veins on the arm were twisting like it was some living thing.

It was difficult to describe the feeling of it. It was just extremely painful.

Xuan Bing looked at him and said, "Hmm. I understand. You mean, you didn't know it was me. So maybe it is right that you said those words to me without any hesitation. You don't feel guilty to humiliate a woman as long as you didn't know it was me. Correct? In other words, if it isn't me here, if it is some other woman, you can just insult her as much as you wish, and do as you want, right?"

...

Chapter 977: Explanation

"So you feel it right to bully the weak and fawn on the strong? That's why you beg for my mercy so sincerely? Is this what your Saint Sunlight Sect do?"

Xuan Bing's voice was cold like ice. She sneered, "Well. No wonder your sect had lived in the world for tens of thousand years. What a bravo skill!"

The middle-aged man's face was totally cracked because of the pain in his arm. He was sweating badly, like he was just out of water. He spoke in a hoarse voice, "I... I was wrong..."

"Oh. You know the shame. Well, why don't I give you a chance to show your true heart." Xuan Bing pointed at his other arm with a finger.

The other arm started to swell and twist, getting on the same process of the first arm.

"Why don't you say something? I know you are good at talking. I asked about your name, didn't I? Why don't you tell me? Are you looking down upon me? You just don't feel like answering me?"

Xuan Bing indifferently and coldly said, "Your attitude annoys me. Since you love to kill other's families, I guess you don't care much for your own family. I don't mind visiting your family some time. I wonder what they look like? Do they look like you? I guess I will recognize your children for the first sight. Hmm. Oh, right. You asked me if I like you? What a pity. You are a little bit wrong with it!"

The middle-aged man was quivering. His lips turned purple.

He knew what Xuan Bing meant. He could feel the murderous intent in her voice.

However, he was unable to stop her.

He didn't even have the power to beg for mercy.

When he realized she was Xuan Bing, he knew that his future was ruined. He was hopeless!

He knew it was over.

Not only himself, but also his entire family were done.

It was an unforgivable mistake.

He just made this mistake.

All he did was to let loose of his filthy mouth. At the moment, he didn't hate Xuan Bing the most. Instead, he hated Han Bingxue to the bones!

It was Han Bingxue who lured him to say those words and led him to the death.

"Great Elder Xuan..." The white-bearded old man had a complicated expression on the face. He slowly walked to Xuan Bing, lowered his head with silver hairs, and apologized in sincerity, "I am sorry."

"Shut up!" Xuan Bing sneered, "Sorry? And you want me to forget what you have done? Since when are your words so powerful?"

The old man made a long sigh and humbly said, "I know it is never enough to just apologize. We have made a mistake that we can never make up. I just want to ask what should we do to make you feel better and spare our lives?"

Xuan Bing coldly said, "Mistake? What mistake? Bai Bufan, please explain it to me. What does a mistake mean? Maybe we have different explanations for the same word. Maybe they are two totally different meanings in our minds. Now, if we can't have a shared understanding of this word, how do you expect me to spare you?"

The old man, Bai Bufan felt disgraced. His face turned red. He took a deep breath, held the humiliation in mind, and said, "It is

our fault. We are wrong. We..."

The Saint Elder of Saint Sunlight Sect, who was in a rather high position in the sect, lowered his head with regret.

It was such a disgrace.

But he had to do it.

Otherwise, he would have to face death.

"I am asking you to explain the word mistake. I didn't tell you to apologize! Why do you tell me who is wrong? What? Am I bullying you now?" Xuan Bing's cold eyes were like the eyes of gods from the heavens staring down at the mortals.

It was overwhelming and undeniable.

She wouldn't show any impression of weakness as she was on the righteous side.

She was pushing him, overwhelmingly, leaving no space to negotiate at all.

Bai Bufan looked bitter in the eyes. His chest was filled with grudge. The other men behind him were all ashamed and angry. They looked at Xuan Bing with anger and fear in the eyes.

They feared for Xuan Bing for a long time. That was unchangeable.

However, she was humiliating the old man. They just couldn't stop feeling angry about it.

Besides, they were all superior cultivators.

They were a group of capable cultivators!

They always bullied others! They had never been suppressed like this before!

None of them had ever imagined such embarrassment and disgrace!

Some of them even drew out their swords a bit. The clouds were

rolling in the sky. The energy of Dao Origin Stage was gathering slowly!

It was intense. A big fight was going to begin.

Xuan Bing looked at them. She looked so indifferent. Then she looked at the sky, where the clouds were gathering. She didn't want to stop it.

In her eyes, the viciousness was getting heavier and heavier.

As long as any of them moved, she would fight back and massacre all of them.

She was confident that none of them could survive once she attacked.

After that, she would even go to Saint Sunlight Sect to make bigger troubles for them.

She didn't mind if they made it a huge disturbance!

She wouldn't mind leading Saint Sunlight Sect to extinction!

The reason why she wanted to do so was that she found this sect was a huge threat to her master.

That was why she intended to lead the men to the extreme situation.

The bigger the disturbance they made, the better excuse she had to strike the Saint Sunlight Sect!

She would kill all the threats to her master. The only thing that mattered in her heart was Ye Xiao's safety!

"Do not move! All of you!" Bai Bufan turned around and shouted nervously. Suddenly, he spat out a full mouth of blood. - Pah! -

Because of the shame and anger, he was feeling worse and worse.

He stood right in front of Xuan Bing. As the most experienced and powerful man among the nineteen people, he could sense the gathering of Xuan Bing's energy. She was amassing murderous qi

slowly. The astonishing spiritual power which felt deep like the ocean was gathering under Xuan Bing's feet.

She was ready!

...

Chapter 978: To Revenge By Himself

Deep in Bai Bufan's heart, he knew that it was getting out of control.

This was a disaster.

Xuan Bing hadn't done anything yet because she was waiting for them to do it first. She wanted a much more righteous reason to kill them all!

If anyone of his men dared to attack, they would all be killed! No exception. He knew that it might also influence their sect's safety!

Saint Sunlight Sect might be an unattainable force in Qing-Yun Realm, however, in Xuan Bing's eyes, it was not. If Xuan Bing wanted the Saint Sunlight Sect to collapse, then Saint Sunlight Sect would fall soon!

Apparently, she was ready to do it. However, Bai Bufan knew that he couldn't give her that excuse!

He turned around again and took a deep breath. He bowed and spoke with shame, "What mistake means..."

He actually started to explain the word 'mistake'! He just did what Xuan Bing told him to do.

That was such a humiliation. He would never be able to forget it! Nobody would!

As a Saint Elder of Saint Sunlight Sect, he would never be able to stand with his head up in front of other elders, not to mention Xuan Bing!

However, he had to do this. He had to accept all humiliation.

Otherwise, he would die. Everyone would die.

More importantly, it would bring disaster to his sect. The history of Saint Sunlight Sect might have to be ended. He couldn't take that responsibility.

That was why he decided to accept the humiliation. He had to!

"It is all our fault. It is not just a mistake. We were unforgivable. Please! I apologize. I am so sorry!"

His hair was all white. He said, "It is not enough to just say sorry. Please enlighten me. What should we do to make you feel better. I will do whatever you want. Please show us mercy. Do not blame our sect!"

His men all stared at this old man. They all gritted their teeth in anger.

They couldn't believe what they saw!

Even the water from all oceans in the world couldn't scrub the disgrace!

Xuan Bing coldly stared at Bai Bufan.

She hadn't thought that he would do this.

She never knew that he could bear this much for his sect!

That was surprising. It made it difficult for her to rage up.

"What is his name?" She pointed at the middle-aged man, who was gasping and moaning because of the pain under her feet.

Bai Bufan sighed and said, "Zhao Xingnan! Apologize to Great Elder!"

"Zhao Xingnan..." Xuan Bing indifferently said, "What should I do to him? Any suggestions, Saint Elder?"

That was a tough one. Zhao Xingnan was Bai Bufan's people. No matter what he did, he was still their disciple. Bai Bufan had to protect him in some way. If Xuan Bing's people fell into such a situation, no matter what it was, she would definitely protect her own people.

However, if Bai Fanan asked her to show mercy to Zhao Xingnan, it would give her a reason to start the killing!

Bai Bufan stayed silent for a while and then made a long sigh. He suddenly stepped ahead and waved his hand! - Pah! - He slapped on Zhao Xingnan's head. Zhao Xingnan's head immediately got cracked and his brain shed out from the skull. He actually killed him!

He slowly turned around and submitted to the humiliation. He said, "This bastard disciple offended Great Elder Xuan Bing. He deserved to die! I am a Saint Elder of our sect. Here, I take the responsibility to clean our sect. However, it is also my fault that our disciple did such a shameless thing. I beg for punishment."

Xuan Bing's black robe was flickering in the air. Her cold eyes were like stars, staring at Bai Bufan through the dark silk.

Bai Bufan felt extremely scared, but he had to stay calm. He looked sad and hopeless. He had to submit to failure.

Now that he had gone this far, he had to keep going.

He understood that Zhao Xingnan would never survive this because he insulted Xuan Bing. What he did was giving Zhao Xingnan a quick death. It ended his suffering after all.

In fact, if he stood out and tried to protect Zhao Xingnan, not only Zhao Xingnan would die, but also the others.

Xuan Bing looked cold and indifferent as usual. However, in her heart, she felt troubled.

She never hesitated to kill, but she was also a reasonable person. She didn't want to go against her own conscience. Bai Bufan had been extremely humble. He had kept himself low to the ground. If she still went for a massacre, it would be improper.

She killed those who were unbending but spared those who kneeled.

It was a rule in the Qing-Yun Realm. It was fine to kill those who kept being arrogant, but there was always a chance to those who submitted to failure. It was always without guilt to kill those who

didn't bend their knees, but improper to kill those who humbly lowered their head to apologize.

For cultivators, feeling guilty was a big problem. It was the most usual problem that caused a demonic heart!

Ye Xiao had been quiet the whole time. As he saw what happened, he figured it was time to call it off. No matter how overwhelming Xuan Bing was, she wouldn't kill Bai Bufan under such circumstances.

He stepped ahead and said, "Great Elder..."

Han Bingxue was surprised. [What is he doing? He's not going to add fuel to the fire, is he? No! Don't do that! We don't need to! Wait, is he going to appease this problem? Is he out of his mind?]

In fact, Ye Xiao had his own plan. It was time to end this chaos. Xuan Bing had occupied all the high position. If she kept pushing, it would be improper. That was why he intended to appease it...

On one hand, it would give her a reason to stop this, on the other hand, most importantly, he should be the one who would wipe out Saint Sunlight Sect! After all, it was his biggest sworn enemy!

What happened to him in the previous life was his pain in the heart. He had to take revenge himself. Otherwise, he would never feel peace in the heart.

Besides, he was not the only one who needed to do this.

There was also Li Wuliang.

...

Chapter 979: Reason to Kill

He wouldn't like to use other's hand to avenge himself. It was not what a hero should do!

That was why Ye Xiao didn't want those men to die here in Xuan Bing's hand.

Xuan Bing waved her hand to interrupt Ye Xiao's talking. She turned to Bai Bufan and blandly said, "Do you think I am being unreasonable not showing you mercy? I remember when I went to your sect, I told you to lock your sect for three years. Do you remember?"

Bai Bufan took a deep breath and said, "That's true. You did."

"So, let's just forget about the humiliation just now. Look at you. A group of your men showed up in this place. Don't you think you are disrespecting me?" Xuan Bing humped. Her eyes were filled with murderous intent again. "You, the entire Saint Sunlight Sect, do you ever respect my words?"

Bai Bufan's eyes were full of despair.

[I have already killed my own man to make peace. She still got a new reason to kill us. She just never wants to give up with it.]

[She just wants to kill us!]

[She would kill us all. No matter what we say, she will always get a reason to start killing. She will find another reason!]

[We are never able to survive this today.]

Why did they get out their sect?

In fact, Saint Sunlight Sect had a reason to do so. Shadowless Assassin had been killing their disciples. The leadership could never just let him get away. They finally found the assassin and wounded him. After that, they surely had to find the wounded Shadowless Assassin and kill him once and for all! Bai Bufan and

his men showed up in this place because they were here to kill Han Bingxue. Han Bingxue was a sworn enemy to Wu Huitian, also a good friend to Xiao Monarch. Saint Sunlight Sect had to kill him too!

They had a good reason to come out.

That was a good reason in the usual days!

However, Bai Bufan decided to stay silent.

He knew Xuan Bing would never approve it.

No matter what he said, it meant nothing to her!

He stood there, feeling cold and despair. He had learned how powerful Xuan Bing could be after what she just did to them. He knew that even if the eighteen of them fought together, they could never defend from one of Xuan Bing's palm strike!

Xuan Bing was sick! She was even more powerful than people said she was! Much more powerful!

To defeat Xuan Bing, maybe the seven most powerful elders of Saint Sunlight Sect together could have a chance!

However, with the seventeen people he had, he knew it was hopeless. Even if they tried to do suicide attacks, they might still fail to even harm Xuan Bing a bit!

Who had a tougher fist made the law. It truly was the first rule in the Qing-Yun Realm. What happened proved it right!

In front of absolute power, nothing else mattered!

Xuan Bing inhaled facing the sky. Her black robe was fluttering. It scared them.

In the sky, silver snakes showed up. Those were lightning in the clouds.

As long as she started it, the thunderclaps would echo around her!

"I am just a woman," Xuan Bing murmured.

Suddenly, her eyes were like two sharp knives.

Bai Bufan was shocked. He heard her, but he didn't understand.

[I am just a woman?]

[What does that mean?]

Nobody, not even Ye Xiao, understood what she meant. Ye Xiao didn't know why she had to kill those people. She just wanted to kill them, even though she knew it might make her an improper person.

In fact, what she just said was the reason.

I am just a woman.

No matter how powerful she was, she was just a woman. [1]

She couldn't just let them hurt the man she loved.

For a woman, nothing was more important than the man she loved! [2]

When she fought against all the powerful sects in the realm, she did it for the same reason. This time, she wanted to kill these men for the same reason.

[I just can't let you threaten his safety. I will clean all the threats that might hurt him in the future. I can kill the entire world for this! I can carry the sin for him!]

[I don't care.]

Powerful wind came over.

Xuan Bing's robe was fluttering hard. Suddenly, she stretched her arms and shook them.

- Boom! -

A mass of dark fog suddenly exploded and spread out hundreds of meters!

"Die!" She jumped up. At the same time, in the clouds, countless lightning started to strike down!

The entire world was shaking for it!

Bai Bufan shouted, "Array!"

At this moment, he had no other option. Since he could never cease her anger, he had to try to fight for survival. Even though he knew it barely meant anything, he still wanted to try! It was better than waiting for death!

However, he was late.

Xuan Bing shouted loudly. Nobody knew where her voice came from.

"Beauty in the world; ice to the cloud!"

She rushed out fast.

The dark fog in the air suddenly froze, like a huge piece of black ice. The entire space was locked! The lightning became the color of jade!

That was the sign of fully operated Ling Xiao Ice Art!

"Stop!" at this moment, Ye Xiao suddenly shouted.

He was not sure if he could stop her. He knew that if Xuan Bing killed those men now, the war between Misty Cloud Palace and the three factions would begin.

Xuan Bing made an energy shield to protect him. He knew she cared for him. That was why he had to consider it for Xuan Bing. He knew the serious result of this fight!

What happened just now might be an issue about a woman's dignity. It could be big, but in fact, it was not a big problem. It truly was just a mistake. On Saint Sunlight Sect's side, Bai Bufan had done all he could to make peace. Zhao Xingnan was killed by him with one palm strike. Whether he killed Zhao Xingnan with a sincere heart or not, he did it. Saint Sunlight Sect had shown

enough respect to Xuan Bing!

Xuan Bing surely knew it. That was why she hesitated for a while.

She said the last few words for herself so that she could make up her mind to start killing.

She didn't have to pull all the girls in Misty Cloud Palace down to the chaos with her just for the man she loved!

Besides, if she killed a bunch of men who had submitted to her, it would influence her mental status, which was nearly in a perfect stage.

No matter how serious the influence would be, the outcome would always be negative on her heart.

...

[1] TL's Note: I just can't agree with this opinion.

[2]TL's Note: Not this either.

Chapter 980: Boss?

Ye Xiao didn't understand why Xuan Bing insisted in killing those men, but he just didn't want this most powerful female cultivator to carry the sin for it.

If her mental status was distracted by guilt, she would have trouble making progress in cultivation.

Moreover...

Ye Xiao worried that the idea of taking revenge would become the trouble that impacted his mental state.

It might also become the trouble in Li Wuliang's mental state.

All they had been thinking about was to take revenge. He didn't want a future that they had no enemy to seek revenge on when they were finally recovered to their prime.

What if all their enemies were dead?

As Ye Xiao shouted, Xuan Bing humped and then suddenly moved backward fast like whirlwind.

Clouds rolled up to the sky with lightning and then disappeared in the sky.

Xuan Bing had come beside Ye Xiao. She gently asked, "Why?"

"If you do this, you will have a demon heart. It isn't worth it." Ye Xiao looked at Xuan Bing warmly. He still couldn't see her face or her eyes, but he just kept staring at her. He softly said, "Just let them go."

"There will be more opportunities." Ye Xiao said, "Kill those who are unbending, but spare those who kneeled. There is law and there is also ethics. Besides, you are one of the best cultivators in the world. You don't need to do this just for some stupid men."

Xuan Bing's eyes turned soft. She felt warmth in the heart.

[Is he... caring for me?]

[He doesn't want me to get a demon heart?]

All of a sudden, the murderous qi had all but vanished. What filled her heart was all softness. Nobody knew, but the warmth was deep inside her.

Han Bingxue spoke in agreement, "That's right. Not only will you have a demon heart, we will too."

He was also an expert in cultivation. He fully understood what Ye Xiao was worrying. He realized he should consider more than just killing those men. He agreed with Ye Xiao, so he said it.

It didn't only concern Xuan Bing, but also Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao!

Xuan Bing humped and coldly said, "I don't care about having a demon heart. You will have it because you are too weak in cultivation. You don't have a tough mind. It is not my fault."

The words she said sounded cold and bland, but there was no murderous intent anymore.

The eighteen men on the other side were all showing blue faces. What Xuan Bing just did had totally shocked them in the soul.

Bai Bufan's warning was too late. The men had no time to set up an array to defend from her attack. In fact, even if they do have time to put on the array, they would eventually die in her hands.

At that moment, every single one of them felt the aura of death. They could feel death approaching step by step.

Xuan Bing stopped before any murderous attacks were made, but what she did had already made them feel the horror. And the horror stayed in their heart for a long time.

The stronger cultivator, the stronger his sense of death.

It was... the feeling of hell! It was the experience of death!

The horror that appeared in their hearts this time would become nightmares for the rest of their lives!

However, they never thought that the famous Xuan Bing, who overwhelmed the world, would stop the fight just because of a few words of a young man.

At least she temporarily stopped!

They all looked at the young man with gratitude in the eyes.

[What a nice guy. What a generous man.]

[We were going to kill you, yet you actually saved us.]

[You are a sage. You are a saint. Maybe you are virtue itself?]

Ye Xiao was speechless being stared at.

[I really do want to kill you. I just don't want Li Wuliang to be disappointed when he gets out and finds nobody he wants to kill is alive...]

[Well... I want you to live because I want him to kill you someday!]

[I really don't care about your lives. I am just doing this for me, for Li Wuliang, and for Han Bingxue. I do this for my brothers... Hmm. For Xuan Bing too!]

Xuan Bing made a long sigh and said, "I won't kill them, but they need to be punished. All those who insulted me, slap yourselves one hundred times and each of you leave one arm. Then you can go!"

After a while, there were several arms on the floor. The men showed their gratitude to Ye Xiao and then left this place.

Ye Xiao didn't look good though, because of the words those men said to him before they left. He was actually pissed. 'Like father, like son', 'Hero father, hero son', 'Good father, better son', and others... Of course, he would never like hearing such compliments!

Xuan Bing knew it well, so she felt amused. After all, it was hard to see her master being embarrassed like this. After all was done, she casually said, "Let's go."

Han Bingxue coughed and moved faster ahead to lead the way. He was a smart man.

"Let's slow down a bit." Xuan Bing said to Ye Xiao as she was walking, "Tell me why you let them leave? You should always pull up the roots before they get on you again. To destroy the threats in advance is a good move before the real fight, isn't it?"

Ye Xiao smiled and didn't answer her.

Han Bingxie didn't go far, so he heard them. He laughed and said, "I think Boss is right. If we killed them all, it might not lead to a good situation. At least, you will get a demon heart because of the improper killing."

"Besides, our enemies should die in our own hands. That is all for revenge. We won't accept anybody else's favor on this matter." He laughed. "It is the insistence and honor of men. I guess you will understand it."

Xuan Bing nodded to show agreement. Then she abruptly raised her head and stared at Han Bingxue with two sharp eyes. "Boss? Did you just call him... Boss?"

Ye Xiao was stunned.

Han Bingxue was stunned too.

After what happened, Han Bingxue had treated Xuan Bing as their ally. That was why he didn't particularly try to hide something from her. He spoke fast and called Ye Xiao 'Boss'. That was a problem that was not easy to solve.

[You, Han Bingxue, are definitely not a match to me, Xuan Bing. However, you are still one of the powerful cultivators in the realm. Yet you called this young man Boss? Why? What are you hiding?]

If he denied it, Xuan Bing wouldn't believe him.

After Xuan Bing's question, Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while, then he casually said, "There is a reason, of course. But it's our secret. Please forgive us..."

Xuan Bing was speechless.

[It is our secret!]

[That's the explanation... What a clever answer that blocks every approach that I can take to the truth...]

[If I keep asking, I will be a ruthless and impolite person!]

...

Chapter 981: Familiar Body Fragrance?

Xuan Bing didn't get mad though.

She blandly smiled and said, "Well, since it's your secret, I won't push." In fact she was thinking, [Secret? Humph! I will know it sooner or later. A secret between two straight men...]

Then she stopped thinking about it!

After that, Ye Xiao made a shout to call Darky over. Three people and a horse got on the road. Han Bingxue insisted not to get on the ride. Xuan Bing surely wouldn't do it either. She was much more powerful than either of them, so she didn't need to ride a horse.

Ye Xiao rode the horse alone.

Han Bingxue was leading the way far ahead of the other two. Xuan Bing was walking beside Darky.

Actually, it gave Ye Xiao a weird feeling.

He felt like he was a young lord of some wealthy family, traveling with his concubine and servant...

He felt it ridiculous and unbelievable.

However, the feeling just rose in his heart.

He didn't know why he would have such a feeling...

It was quite a strange journey.

When they arrived at the small town and were ready to have meal, Xuan Bing left the table and found another table to eat her own food, with her back to them.

Ye Xiao felt weird about it.

Han Bingxue looked at her and spoke to Ye Xiao in the voice of an experienced playboy, "Boss, although Elder Xuan is expansive and generous, she doesn't want us to see her face. Look at her. She would rather eat alone than share a table with us. There must be

something wrong about it."

His face looked extremely wicked. While speaking, he raised up the eyebrow on one side, like he knew something about it.

Ye Xiao jeered and said, "Anybody has habits. She is a lady after all. Isn't it normal that she keeps modesty in some way? However, I don't think many people have seen Xuan Bing's face in Qing-Yun Realm..."

Han Bingxue got even closer to Ye Xiao, "You know what... Do you think she does this because... she's too ugly? That's why... you know... When she eats, she has to show her mouth..."

Ye Xiao speechlessly looked at him then said, "I guess you need a punch on your face. What an annoying mouth... What does it concern you whether she is ugly or not?"

"Not at all. Heh, heh, heh, heh..." Han Bingxue moved his head away and rubbed his nose.

[Why does boss seem lost? I didn't say anything serious. Isn't it the art of brotherhood to have some little chats on the table? Why does he have to be so strict to me?]

In fact, he was right about Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was a bit lost.

When Xuan Bing was still sitting beside him on the same table, she was too close to him.

She was almost touching him on the table.

Whatever she did, she made him feel like she had gotten used to staying with him. They just looked like a couple!

When she first sat down, Ye Xiao smelled a refreshing fragrance. It was a beautiful scent from the body of a woman.

She was great in martial art, but she was still a woman. It was normal that she had a special fragrance on the body.

What surprised Ye Xiao was that the fragrance seemed so familiar to him...

He sniffed it subconsciously.

That was when Xuan Bing suddenly stood up and went to another table to have her meal alone.

Ye Xiao was totally a rookie in the area of love stories. He didn't know what he did that had made him look like a satyr to a woman. He was lost in the thoughts of the fragrance... [Why is it so familiar? It should be my first time to meet Elder Xuan Bing, no matter in this life or the previous one.]

[I am sure about it.]

[Why would I feel familiar?]

[Is it the Ling Xiao Ice Art of her? But... Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu didn't have this fragrance on them. I have been quite close to both of them too. If they have such a wonderful fragrance, I should have smelled it!]

[Maybe when I was touching them, I was too concentrated, so I didn't realize that I was smelling it. However, deep inside my heart, I did remember their fragrance. Is it possible?]

[I should try to smell her a few more times. Maybe it will arouse my memory about it, and I will figure out the reason!]

He was lost in thoughts, thinking about different possibilities. That was why he looked lost.

On the other side, Xuan Bing pretended to be cold and indifferent while sitting on the other table. She was covered by the aura of 'do not come close'. She was like an ice mountain that had last for billion years.

In fact, her heart was beating fast.

When Ye Xiao sniffed, she knew she had made a mistake.

That was a big mistake.

[He has stayed with me and cuddled me in sleep every night for half a year. Of course he knows the smell of my body! What if he

recognizes me...]

[I am not ready yet.]

[I am not ready, both physically and mentally...]

[Neither.]

[I was too close to him. I didn't even realize what I was doing. I have gotten used to being his maid during the days with him. It influenced me till the present. Although I realized the mistake when I had just sat there for a short time and hurriedly got away, he already noticed it. Why is his nose so sharp?]

[Humph! Even if he did recognize me, so what? I will just say no. I don't know him. I have no relation to him...]

[What could he do? What does he dare to do?]

Xuan Bing wrinkled her nose and made up her mind.

They didn't hesitate and just got back on the road after the meal. Ye Xiao realized Xuan Bing was staying far from him on purpose. Every time when he tried to get close and sniff, Xuan Bing would casually walk away a few steps. He just couldn't smell that fragrance again.

In the end, he figured they were too slow, so he whipped Darky to urge it.

Darky got angry and started to run fast. Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing were both powerful cultivators. Even though Darky was the King of Horses, which was faster than other horses, it couldn't run pass them. Three persons and a horse had run fifteen hundred miles when night had come.

Darky was sweating but spirited. It seemed able to keep running.

Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing had their Jing and Mai full of energy. They didn't feel tired at all. Ye Xiao, who had been riding the horse, felt ache on the legs.

They could have kept running, but they stopped.

Something happened.

A shadow was approaching fast from the sky like lightning. It was a person. When the three of them saw it, it fell to the ground.

- Bang! - A person fell in front of Ye Xiao!

...

Chapter 982: Grey Mountain Stranger

A man fell from the sky. After all, Qing-Yun Realm was a world that only the bigger fist represented the law and one could be seen through by a cold glance.

It wasn't so surprising that people fell from the sky. If they cared about every man who fell from the sky, they might have to give up half of their lives on this business!

However, this time, it was different. If they didn't stop, Darky would crash that man.

Xuan Bing, Han Bingxue, and Ye Xiao all realized it, so they stopped!

That man fell from high and firmly hit the floor. Blood shed from his nose, mouth, eyes, and ears. The blood shot up to the sky over ten meters high.

They looked at the man. He was pale on the face. There weren't many wounds on his body. Only... they found a deep sword wound on his chest, close to his heart!

That sword must have stabbed through his chest!

His heart was totally broken by the qi on the sword.

However, he was still breathing. He was struggling with death.

Even though he was severely injured, he still kept himself sober. He opened his eyes and looked at the three, speaking weakly and slowly, "Help me!"

'Help me'!

Ye Xiao looked at the wound. He was sure there was no way to cure him.

Even though he had lots of dan beads which saved lives like a blessing from the heavens, none of them worked for this man. He was dying.

Not that the sword wound was killing him. In fact, he had burned out his own life energy in the tough fight before he came to this place.

Both his life energy and his physical body were damaged. There was no way to cure him!

"Guo Meng from Grey Mountain?" Xuan Bing frowned. Almost at the same time, Han Bingxue said, "Guo Meng!" He sounded in shock.

Ye Xiao realized whom they were looking at when he heard them say his name.

He had never met this man before, but he knew that there was a weird man in Grey Mountain of the north. His name was Guo Meng, a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator, who was called Grey Mountain Stranger.

How could this superior cultivator show up in this place?

He was severely injured and could die at any moment!

The three of them all felt it strange, so they crowded over to check on Gun Meng.

"Let us help. We have to know what happened to you." Han Bingxue asked.

Guo Meng realized the three had recognized him. He looked comforted in the eyes. He was gasping, showing a red face, as if he would die the next second. Apparently, he was trying to say something, but no words went out his mouth. He must have been hurt real bad, so he couldn't say anything anymore.

Ye Xiao sighed and put a dan bead into his mouth.

Guo Meng was not his enemy, but he was not his friend either. They were strangers to each other.

However, when a superior cultivator wanted to say something at the last moment of his life, Ye Xiao was willing to help, as he had

the capability to help.

However, it was a bit expensive!

After all, to give a stranger a supreme dan bead was extravagant!

Guo Meng looked grateful in the eyes and then closed his eyes.

He had taken the dan bead and still needed time to digest it.

What he needed the most was time. No matter how powerful the dan bead was, for him, who was in such a miserable condition, he just wanted a few more time before he died. He wouldn't ask for full recovery.

"He must have burned his life energy to get away from a fight after he got damaged badly..." Xuan Bing said in a low voice.

Han Bingxue nodded to agree.

Whatever Ye Xiao could tell, Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue could also tell, as they were both experts in cultivation too!

"This wound is weird." Ye Xiao was checking the wound. He spoke in a low voice, "Do you realize it? The sword didn't slow down a bit when it went through the chest."

"Hmm?"

Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were confused. A wound was a wound. It was a wound that was caused by a thorough sword stab. Why would it slow down?

Ye Xiao was living a second life now. He didn't waste time in the Land of Han-Yang. He had been living there for only two years, but he had learned things that he could never do as Xiao Monarch in Qing-Yun Realm. One of the things was the knowledge of wounds!

With the help from Brother Egg and Boundless Space, he got to make the priceless Supreme Dan, the best work of the art of dan-making. Supreme Dan could cure almost every disease or wound. However, even though it was easy for him to make supreme dan beads, that was hundreds or even thousands times easier than any

other people, it still cost him lots of treasures. That was why when he used supreme dan beads, he was always careful. That was also why he was so good at curing wounds and diseases.

Back to the days when he was leading an army to fight against the army of the Kingdom of Lanfeng, which was over ten times bigger in number than the Kingdom of Chen, he still won the war, because he used lots of supreme dan beads to save and cure his soldiers. His army was like the army of the undead.

During that war, because practicing medicine with his soldiers, he got a great improvement in medicine and knowledge of physical wounds. Even in the entire Qing-Yun Realm, there was nobody who could be as good as Ye Xiao in the area of medicine!

"Cultivators have a natural strong sensation for attacks and crisis. Even when ordinary people, rather than superior cultivators, are attacked, wherever on their body that got hit, the skin and muscle will shrink to resist the injury. It's the nature of human. There shouldn't be any exception. However, this Grey Mountain Stranger doesn't seem to follow the nature's rule."

Ye Xiao pointed at the wound and said, "A level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator should have a strong defensive power from the muscle itself. Even if it was Miss Xuan who attacked him, you couldn't make such a smooth wound. Even if the man who attacked him had forcibly broken his defensive power, it still wouldn't leave a smooth wound like this. In that case, the wound should be blasted... It just shouldn't be like this."

"Is it possible that his enemy is way too stronger than him and attacked him in surprise?" Han Bingxue said.

"If that person is much stronger than him and gave him a surprise attack, it might have a chance to create such wound, but if so, he wouldn't have the chance to get away from that fight," Ye Xiao blandly said.

Xuan Bing nodded to agree.

Of course, she knew it too.

...

Chapter 983: The Horrible Organization Again

"Look at it. The wound looks smooth, but his heart has been thoroughly broken. To make such a wound... I guess when he was attacked, he was totally off guard. When the sword stabbed into his heart, he finally realized it, but it was too late. The sword had pierced deep inside his heart and it crushed it. That caused this wound that sentenced him to death..."

Ye Xiao said.

"It's certainly a surprise attack, isn't it?" Han Bingxue argued.

"He must be off guard. His enemy attacked him in surprise. That's the only way to cause such a wound..." Ye Xiao frowned and spoke to Han Bingxue, "If your head isn't full of dregs, you will figure out if this means a surprise attack."

"Urh..." Han Bingxue was embarrassed.

[Boss, you really should show me a little bit respect. Why can't you put it in a softer way!]

"I did get sneak attacked..." Grey Mountain Stranger weakly opened his eyes. His face looked better and he was more spirited now.

The three of them knew that it was a momentary recovery of consciousness before death. Ye Xiao's dan bead had aroused his last bit of life energy. Only powerful supreme dan bead had such efficacy!

"She showed up in the face of my dead wife..." Guo Meng smiled bitterly. He looked at the sky with his blank eyes, murmuring, "My wife has been dead... for thirteen years now..."

"I thought I was in a dream. In fact, even if it was a dream, I would love to stay in it and have a close look at her..."

"Heh, heh, heh..." He bitterly smiled. Blood kept running out from his mouth. "When I saw her... I was shocked... I barely have a sober mind... I didn't even know it when she stabbed me... I couldn't feel any pain..."

"That's good though... dying in someone who looks exactly like my wife. Even though it is a sneaky scheme, even though it was just a dream, I still... got to see her again..."

His eyes became fainter. He struggled to reach one hand to Ye Xiao, which had a ring on the finger. He said, "Thanks for your dan bead. It gave me the chance to say my last word. This ring... is for you... If you are available, please bury me in Grey Mountain... I want to be buried with my wife..."

His head fell aside when he finished the last word. He died.

The famous Grey Mountain Stranger died.

Even though he was dead, his blank eyes still stared at Ye Xiao with entreaty. In that pair of blank eyes, there was no anger, grudge, nothing but only peace.

The last thing he wanted was to be buried with his beloved wife in Grey Mountain.

...

Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were shocked by what Guo Meng just said. Apparently, they couldn't understand it.

"How is that possible? He couldn't recognize his own wife? His wife died thirteen years ago. This is so weird..."

"It is weird. Couldn't he even tell the living from dead?" Han Bingxue frowned in confusion.

It was a good question.

"He shouldn't be so insane. He was a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator. His mental status should be much stronger than that. How could he be distracted like that?" Xuan Bing frowned. She was

confused too. "What's weirder is that... somebody attacked him and put him to death, but he didn't feel angry or have a grudge at all. That is unreasonable..."

Unlike the other two, Ye Xiao understood what had happened when Guo Meng started to talk about how the killer looked like his wife.

He wasn't more experienced than Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue since he just had seen it once. What happened to Xiao Mufei was exactly the same with Guo Meng. They both had longed for their beloved ones. That was why they didn't regret to die in that situation. Maybe for them, the reunion with their beloved ones was much more important than many other things in their lives! They wouldn't regret it!

Ye Xiao made a sigh.

That horrible secret organization was on the move again.

"It is a long story to explain this." Ye Xiao took off the space ring from Guo Meng's finger. He checked inside the ring and there wasn't anything special. In the ring, there were not many materials, but all of them were in high quality.

What had drawn Ye Xiao's attention were a few books. The books recorded Guo Meng's experience on his martial art cultivation.

Normally, these books should be like some excellent martial art guidance from a powerful superior cultivator. They should be priceless for normal people, however, the three of them were all experienced cultivators who were or used to be some of the greatest cultivators, so they didn't really care about it. The books had no use for them.

There was a picture that was well maintained. On the picture, there was a lady, who had beautiful eyebrows, big smile on the face, and seemed staring at something. It was so well drawn as if she was alive in it.

"I guess this is Guo Meng's wife." Xuan Bing sounded sad. She said, "Guo Meng... actually carried the picture of his wife with him no matter where he went. He was such an emotional and sensitive man..."

"I never knew this Grey Mountain Stranger was actually a man of love and affection. It is such a pity that I didn't have the chance to be friends with him!" Han Bingxue sighed. He felt sorry for him too.

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He put on a fire and burned Guo Meng's body into ashes, and then put the ashes into a pot. The pot was kept in his own space ring afterwards.

Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue did help too. They just wanted to do something for this respectful Grey Mountain Stranger. When everything was done, they both sighed.

[No matter how powerful you were when you were alive, how you conquered the world, you would eventually become a pile of ashes. That's all. In the end, you still needed somebody to handle your body. Otherwise, it will rot in the wild or maybe eaten by animals... You wouldn't know...]

"Life in the martial world..." Han Bingxue seemed gloomy.

Guo Meng was not powerful enough to be one of the best cultivators. However, he had a resounding reputation, yet he died in this place, unknown to the world.

The life in the martial world was a life to the death. Now, another lost soul was gone!

"Let's go. I'll explain everything I know to you."

Ye Xiao said.

...

When Ye Xiao told them all about the attack on Xiao Mufei and how he thought the two cases were related to each other, they

were already dozens of miles away from where Guo Meng died. Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were both shocked by what Ye Xiao said. They were astonished and angry at the same time.

"There is actually such an underbred thing!"

"Those people are doing something unacceptable, unforgivable, and heinous!"

...

Chapter 984: Possible Target

Han Bingxue was furious. Xuan Bing was even more furious.

As a woman, she hated it when somebody played with other's feelings. She hated it the most.

However, that was the main business of that vicious organization.

It used people's feelings as their weak point.

So far as they knew, there were two successful cases, Xiao Mufei and Guo Meng!

How many others that they didn't know yet?

They had succeeded on Guo Meng, a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator. Would they go on with some stronger people? Nobody could see the future. Nobody had the answer. But it was sure things wouldn't get better!

"I smell blood." Han Bingxue sniffed and then walked away fast.

"This place is only fifty miles away from where we met Guo Meng." Xuan Bing said, "According to Guo Meng's capability, with that fatal wound, he could run fifty miles at most, even though he had burned the rest of his life energy."

"So this is very likely the place he got attacked."

Xuan Bing said.

Ye Xiao looked quite sad, looking at the direction where Han Bingxue was heading to. He said, "If I am right, this is not Guo Meng's blood. It should be... that woman's."

Xuan Bing suddenly turned to him and said, "What? You mean the woman who attacked him?"

There sounded Han Bingxue's voice, "Ah... A woman... Hiss! Isn't she... Isn't she..."

Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing caught up with him and saw a dead body of a woman lying in a bush, with her face up to the sky. In her eyes, they could see how surprised she was.

Ye Xiao checked the body and found that she had been dead for a while. She might have died even before Guo Meng. It seemed she died with a grievance and everlasting regret.

He looked at her face and realized it was exactly the same as the lady in that picture, which was kept in Guo Meng's ring.

Xuan Bing's eyes widely opened.

No wonder Guo Meng was caught off guard and lost in emotions. He suddenly saw a woman who looked just like his beloved wife, whom he had missed for so many years. This woman even knew lots of things about him. He certainly would be shocked. It would be unreasonable if he wasn't.

Why would this woman die in this place? She killed Guo Meng already! Yet she even died before Guo Meng!

Ye Xiao made a deep sigh and said, "As far as I am concerned, that organization only raised her to kill Guo Meng in a proper opportunity. As long as Guo Meng was meant to die, it means she had fulfilled her mission. She would only become an evidence of their crime afterwards. That's why..."

"So they just killed her when she reported to them. They killed her before she realized it! That would put an end to this thread. How decisive! How brutal!"

"If Guo Meng didn't burn his life energy to get away from here and met us, if I didn't give him that dan bead so that he could tell us the truth before he died, if I didn't experience the same situation before, this would become a case that will never be settled!"

As Ye Xiao spoke, he frowned tighter.

That organization was rigorous and venomous. It was heinous and worrisome in all aspects!

"They didn't have to kill her." Han Bingxue seemed to have a different thought. He said, "She was capable enough to kill Guo Meng. Even though she did a sneak attack, she shouldn't be weak. Otherwise, when she stabbed the sword into Gun Meng's heart, she shouldn't be able to make a blast in the heart. Wasn't it a waste to kill such a capable cultivator? Besides, they could just use her to cheat Guo Meng's friends. She was still useful to them..."

"Whatever you have in your mind about this, they have it too. Don't you think they can?" Ye Xiao blandly said, "Guo Meng was a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He wouldn't have ordinary friends. His friends must also be powerful in some way. How could the organization not target them too? Maybe there are just different traps for different people. Everyone could expect one. They should have prepared for different cases for some time."

"This is the only possibility why they had to kill this woman. If she lives, she might be a threat to other plans. She would become a leak... They had to kill her, so as to keep their secrets and make sure nobody could get to them."

Xuan Bing looked solemn in the eyes, like she had never been before. She spoke in a low voice, "This organization... is horrible. Before this, nobody, no sects, and no force knew about it. Nobody knew that there is actually such a secret organization."

"I guess their days will become tougher in the future, since now Miss Xuan has known about it." Ye Xiao said, "However, I have to amicably remind you... Since this organization has rooted so deep, you, Miss Xuan... maybe one of their targets..."

There were words he didn't say after that. What he said meant a lot.

Xuan Bing was moved.

She was in such a high position in the martial world and strong cultivation capability, so she surely was one of their targets! She was definitely one of their targets!

In fact, she was an important target!

Ye Xiao looks at Han Bingxue and said, "As for you... You too. In fact, every cultivator who still cares for their family, their friends, and their sect will become their target. That's why we have to be very careful in the martial world afterwards. We must think before we do anything reckless."

Han Bingxue showed a solemn face and slowly nodded. He said, "Miss Xuan and I both need to be careful. What about you?"

Ye Xiao smiled. "I guess this is the only friendly setting for rookies in the Qing-Yun Realm. At least they won't pay attention to me any time soon."

It amused Xuan Bing. She showed a big smile.

[You are a little guy who has just come to this world. Why would such a huge organization pay attention to you?]

[Besides, even if they want to set you up, they don't have enough time to prepare.]

[It takes a long time to raise a person who can cheat your eyes. It should be more or less twenty years! Otherwise, their plans wouldn't be so perfect!]

"Now she and all about her have gone to the netherworld. Let's bury her." Ye Xiao sighed.

After that, they got back on the road. Xuan Bing seemed quiet. After a long time of silence, in the dark of night, under the sky of stars, she made a long sigh and said, "A level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator... died in a vile plot... Things in the world are really unpredictable..."

What she said sounded complicated.

"This organization is a huge trouble to the world. Someone has to destroy it!" Han Bingxue spoke after being quiet.

The three of them didn't stop thinking about this horrible secret

organization. Deeper as they thought, the heavier they felt in the heart.

"It must be destroyed!"

Xuan Bing eventually said it.

...

Chapter 985: Is She Ugly?

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Miss Xuan, you must know much more than I do about Qing-Yun Realm. Maybe you can make a conjecture. In this world, who is powerful enough to run such a big organization?"

Xuan Bing bitterly smiled. "This is a hard one. In fact, the top-class sects in the world all have the power to do this. In fact, I am afraid nobody wants to pay the price for such a thing..."

Ye Xiao smiled too.

That was right. To run an organization that was able to make such perfect plans, it must be difficult for almost all forces, no matter how many resources they had. Anybody who wanted to do this must pay lots of time in it. Besides, this was going against people's will on the world. If they made any tiny mistake, it might expose them. Once they were exposed, they could easily be destroyed.

However, they did it so perfectly that nobody knew about it at all.

There must be some world shocking secrets behind this organization.

"However, since they have started to do the attacks, it won't be too long before they appear in front of the public." Xuan Bing's voice contained heavy murderous qi. "Before they did anything, nobody noticed them. That is normal. However, as long as they frequently do such things soon, there will be a thread that can lead to truth!"

"Such organization, the day when it is exposed, is definitely the day it ends!" Xuan Bing spoke in a love voice, "When that day comes, I will surely be one of the people who will get together to sweep them!"

After three days.

They were finally close to the Oracle District.

Nothing special happened in the three days, except Xuan Bing beat Han Bingxue up again on the road.

He truly had a big mouth that was so annoying. She had to beat him up and made him shut up to bring peace!

Han Bingxue was curious about why Xuan Bing had to keep being so mysterious.

One afternoon, he went to talk to Ye Xiao again. "Ah. Boss. Is Miss Xuan too ugly to show her face to others? What do you think?"

Ye Xiao was speechless. He didn't want to answer that.

Han Bingxue asked him a few more times. Ye Xiao hadn't given him any response. Han Bingxue couldn't help but say it out loud, "Is she really that ugly?"

That was right. He said it out loud, not talked to Ye Xiao in mind connection.

That was the reason why things suddenly changed so abruptly!

Before he finished the last word, a tragedy happened to him.

When he said that, he was having a fish soup. After he said it, his head was pushed into the bowl of soup, his butt got kicked hard, and he was kicked out of the restaurant with the soup dripping on his face!

That was just the beginning!

Xuan Bing didn't just go easy on that. She followed him out and gave him a big fight!

At this moment, Xuan Bing's anger had reached a most horrible level! Ye Xiao could only stay silent watching them. He didn't dare to stop her.

For a woman, it was most unacceptable to be called ugly! She felt fine if somebody said she was poor, weak, or anything else.

A woman hated people calling her ugly!

She hated people calling her fat!

No matter who called her either of these two, no matter how soft and gentle she usually was, she would rage up and become a tyrannosaurus!

Han Bingxue was unlucky.

He offended a woman on something she cared the most.

The most!

So he deserved this! He shouldn't complain at all!

He was swollen so bad that he looked three times bigger than he should be after that buffet!

Ye Xiao just kept quiet. He didn't even think about stopping it. In fact, he was gloating... [Good!]

[Bastard! You should get a hard one!]

[You really have an... annoying mouth!]

[You just didn't listen when I tried to teach you. Now you get a tough one. You deserve it!]

[Let's see if you will keep this in mind and watch your mouth! You know what? This is retribution. It always comes. It's just a matter of time!]

The next day when they got back on the road, Han Bingxue was groaning. He was nearly unable to walk.

Xuan Bing had done something rough on him. She made his bones, and Jing and Mai ache till the next day. No matter what he did, he just couldn't make it feel better. Who was Xuan Bing? A powerful cultivator! She wanted him to suffer so that he could remember this. Of course, it wasn't easy for him to ease it...

Han Bingxue was suffering the pain, but didn't dare to be left behind... That was... so miserable... When Ye Xiao saw him like that, he really felt... like laughing out loud...

Maybe Han Bingxue should truly be careful on choosing friends... In fact, everybody should choose a friend like Ye Xiao!

"Can we... take a break..." Han Bingxue was begging.

He kept walking with pain but realized the other two didn't care for him at all. He eventually asked for help!

"No!" Xuan Bing turned it down. "We have found something that concerns the future of the entire realm. Time flies. Why should I take a break now? Do you think you are the fragile one? Haven't little Brother Ye kept staying with us all along? Why doesn't he ask for a break?"

Han Bingxue nearly shed tears.

[Sister, please... Just say it if you want to torture me... Don't put such a sin on me... It's true we found something about that secret organization... It concerns the future of the realm... But... Why are we in a hurry? What for? What's the plan?]

[I am not fragile, okay? Not at all. I don't look like injured, but... I really feel bad. I can't take it anymore. I am suffering unbearable pain here.]

Xuan Bing was apparently an expert in torturing. She had truly given Han Bingxue a hard one, yet she didn't leave any excuse for him. He wasn't injured. There was no wound on him. He could still run his spiritual power.

However... there was just one thing special.

His Jing and Mai were thirty percent locked by Xuan Bing.

It wouldn't show any difference if he just did something normal. However, if he walked for a long time, and it tired his Jing and Mai, he would get muscle aches. If it was just pain, it might be okay

to endure it, but it was muscle aches and soreness together. That was something truly unbearable!

It wasn't easy to do that 'thirty percent' though. Ye Xiao watched her do it. He was an expert too.

He knew that it was a marvelous skill, the Bones Interlaced Art. To make it a perfect torturing skill, she lowered the destructive effect level but added ten times more control level. That made it perfect.

It only made him suffer, but it wouldn't hurt his body.

Ye Xiao had seen through it, but he was sure he was unable to do it. Even when he was Xiao Monarch in his prime, he was still unable to do it. It required a top-level cultivation, best skill, and optimal control to do it!

That was what she had done on Han Bingxue to make him suffer so bad. He was totally walking with tears in his eyes all along.

...

Chapter 986: Oracle District

Han Bingxue knew that he only needed to bear it for one full day. After that, the pain would disappear. In fact, this suffering would bring him great benefit in his body's flexibility.

However, it was... just too difficult to bear.

He had thought about asking Ye Xiao for help, but when he looked at Ye Xiao, the latter was always gloating. He could read from Ye Xiao's eyes that the latter knew he had taken a great advantage on this. That look in Ye Xiao's eyes made him give up the thought of asking for help!

The three of them eventually arrived at Oracle District. What they saw on the road was definitely a place that was much wealthier than the towns they saw before. However, there was one thing they noticed... in this district, they could feel fewer powerful cultivators.

As they moved deeper into the north, they realized there were less and less powerful cultivators that they could sense.

When they were one-third of the way into the center, they found that the most powerful cultivators they sensed were no higher than level six of Dao Origin Stage!

"Oracle District is the weakest cultivation district in the Qing-Yun Realm. People here are always generous but not powerful. Real powerful figures seldom come to this place."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "It is said that once there was a god descending to this place. The god sighed and said this place wasn't fit for martial art cultivation!"

"Maybe it was a prediction, or maybe it was a curse. After that, this place never had any man who could reach level nine of Dao Origin Stage."

"That is why this place is called Oracle District."

"Look at it now. I guess it is even worse than a thousand years ago," Xuan Bing said. "On our way here, I only sensed one man who is nearly level seven of Dao Origin Stage. There is nobody else who has reached a higher level than that man."

"Now, here in this place, the strongest is merely level five. I guess the cultivators just get weaker and weaker as we go closer and closer to the center. I guess the cultivators ahead of us will be even weaker."

"That means a level seven Dao Origin Stage cultivator can live like a king in this district."

Her black robe was flicking in the air. She smiled in a sneering way and said, "It is a big district here. But if Misty Cloud Palace wants to conquer this district, we just need to send a few level seven disciples. That will fully control the entire Oracle District."

Ye Xiao stared at the void in front, lost in thoughts. It looked like he had nothing in mind, but in fact, deep in his heart, he was astonished.

[This is where Ye Clan is located?]

[My father, Ye Nantian, is from this special district?]

[No matter how talented he was, he was limited in this Oracle District!]

Ye Xiao tried to catch the spiritual qi in the air by inhaling while operating the East-rising Purple Qi to absorb the energy, so as to improve his cultivation. However, even with such an extraordinary method, he couldn't absorb any of the spiritual qi in this place. The spiritual qi just kept floating in the air and wouldn't get into him.

[How... How is this possible?]

He was living a second life now. Since he learned East-rising Purple Qi, he had been improving fast. There were some experiences that helped him with the improvement, but the great

East-rising Purple Qi was the main reason why he could be so fast in cultivation!

In Cold Moon Palace, where there was full of spiritual qi, he could absorb ten times the amount of spiritual qi without the use of East-rising Purple Qi within two hours! However, with the help of East-rising Purple Qi, in this place, he could only absorb one-tenth of the amount in two hours.

What a huge difference an environment could make!

After he checked, he surprisingly found that the spiritual qi in this place was dense. There was more spiritual qi in this place than many other places, however, the spiritual was also more energetic than the others.

Cultivators would have to work hundreds of times harder to catch the spiritual qi.

They had to catch the qi and conquer the qi.

In other places, they just needed to absorb, but not in this place.

When they were cultivating, they needed to gather it, catch it, conquer it, and then absorb it. It was a much tougher process. Only those who experienced this could truly feel the difficulty.

Ye Xiao had just tried to do it. He realized that cultivation in this place was truly inefficient, even though he had the East-rising Purple Qi. Compared to the cultivation rate he had outside this place, he was like riding a broken oxcart, while he used to ride an eagle out there!

"What is wrong with this place? How come things are so weird in this place?" Ye Xiao opened his eyes.

"You felt it too? You have a sharp sensation!" Xuan Bing looked at him and smiled bitterly. She said, "This place is huge... It should be a big fat piece of meat. However, the powerful forces in the realm never wanted to control this place. What you found is the reason. After all, the bigger fist makes the law. The most important thing

is cultivation.

"The forces in the realm could conquer this place with just little resources. It is never a difficult thing for any of the sects. However, it barely brings them anything in return. In fact, whoever is sent to this place will degenerate day by day. If a sect's disciples degenerate, the entire sect degenerates. That will only weaken them. It never helps to have an empty district. It can't even give them any pleasure.

"The god's power made this place. A huge piece of tasty meat, but useless!

"Human power can't change this."

Xuan Bing said.

Ye Xiao was enlightened. He said, "I see. So this place is abandoned by the martial world?"

"They just don't want to have it. I won't say they abandoned it." Xuan Bing was smiling. "You know, when we first met, Han Bingxue said something right, even though he didn't know it. What he said was exactly what this place is. Because this place is full of spiritual energy from sky and earth, the natural materials in this place are always valuable.

"However, the three great palaces have been trying to hide this message from the world. On the edge of this district, there are lots of our people who are here to focus on purchasing medical materials.

"Take Misty Cloud Palace as an example... Our Regeneration Ink Lotus are mostly from this district."

...

Chapter 987: Song Clan's Domain

Xuan Bing blandly said, "That is why I know about this place so well. I know that there is indeed a Town of Ye. The medical materials there are quite valuable. He didn't say something stupid, but it was a persuasive excuse to cover your true intent."

She looked at Han Bingxue and nodded to sneer, "He was in good luck. I know he made it up, but what he made up turned out to be the truth. Well, I believe he doesn't know it yet."

Han Bingxue was far in the distance from them. He saw Xuan Bing nod to him, so he thought Elder Xuan was praising him. That flattered him a lot. Although he was still suffering from that pain, he tried to make a smile that he thought was handsome. He kept the two hands behind the back and made a rakish posture.

Ye Xiao saw it and laughed out loud.

Han Bingxue was such a pistachio! [1]

"There is a reason why the three great palaces didn't go deep into Oracle District. People in this area are always weak in cultivation, however, they still have talented ones. Nature's power polishes the living things. Because of the specialty of this district, some people are always gritty and red-blooded."

"It's funny. That is some personality that is attractive to girls." Xuan Bing smiled implicitly. It seemed she was talking about some people she knew.

Ye Xiao thought about it, but he didn't understand. "Attractive to girls? Why? I don't see that."

Xuan Bing hesitated for a while and said, "Maybe it's just their nature. Men here are always more brave and righteous. They are always warm-blooded. They are real men, who are much better than those foppish fools out there. How are they not attractive to girls?"

"There was a story in this place that is famous... Ye Clan in Town of Ye had a genius young man, Ye Nantian. When Yue Gongxue, the saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace, came to collect their medical materials, she was attracted to him... They fell in love for the first sight..."

Ye Xiao looked weird on the face as he heard what Xuan Bing was saying.

[Ye Nantian... Yue Gongxue...]

[They...]

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and suppressed the emotion that was rising up in his heart. He said, "Isn't it... abnormal? Love is the nature's law. A man and a woman fell in love. That's the nature's call. It has nothing to do with the specialty of this place. You are just forcibly connecting the two irrelevant things. That's absurd."

Xuan Bing smiled and said, "Maybe you are right. Or maybe not..." She didn't go on with it.

Ye Xiao had a weird feeling. [I feel that Elder Xuan Bing knows my background.]

[Does she know my real identity? Where I am from?]

[How does she know that?]

[It doesn't make sense!]

He thought for a while and then was enlightened. [Hmm. She knows that I am related to Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu. Of course, she knows something about the Land of Han-Yang from the two ladies. Maybe they drew her a picture of mine? And told her my real identity? Even my father, Ye Nantian? That will explain all!]

[After all, I have the capability to make Regeneration Ink Lotus. They both know. Besides, we used to be allies in this matter.]

[Regeneration Ink Lotus is an important thing to their entire

sect. They would have to report to them.]

He felt relieved after he thought he had known the truth.

[But... It is reasonable that she knows about me. Why doesn't she say it?]

"Back to the days, on the mountains around Town of Ye, the most precious medical material was Regeneration Ink Lotus." It seemed Xuan Bing was trying to explain something. "This time, I am here to see if there is still such a lotus in that place. I guess you understand why it is so important for our sect."

Ye Xiao said, "Oh. I do. Yes. Absolutely."

In fact, he just felt it hilarious. [She seems to be clinging to this matter. She is still trying to explain why she would come with us... It seems she cares about it so much? She started on Han Bingxue's excuse, to tell me that it was a coincidence. Then she talked about the story and the lotus that concerns her sect. It seems she is trying to cover a lie!]

[But we don't care about it!]

[Isn't she holding a candle to the sun? Drawing four feet for a snake? Busying for nothing?]

"It's Thousand Peak Mountain." Han Bingxue said from the front, "At the foot of the mountain, it is the territory of Song Clan."

Han Bingxue knew why Ye Xiao wanted to go to Town of Ye. He also knew his story down in the lower realm. He knew the relationship between Ye Xiao and Song Jue. He believed Song Clan must be their friends. At least they were connected to Ye Xiao.

That was why he said it when they were about to enter Song Clan's place.

"That's soon..." Ye Xiao looked at the smoke rising. It was noon. [Look at the smoke from the houses. They must be cooking?]

"Shall we?" Han Bingxue looked at Ye Xiao.

"Let's find somewhere to settle down," Ye Xiao answered in a low voice. He was lost in thoughts. Then he turned to Xuan Bing, "What do you think, Miss Xuan?"

"Sure." Xuan Bing rolled up her eyes.

[You have made the decision... You asked me after you said it. What do I think? I think no? Can I say disagree?]

Something looks close but is always far away.

That was such wisdom. They had seen the smoke, but it still took them one hour to get to the town.

The three of them had just gotten into the town, trying to find a place to rest. Suddenly, lots of horse steps sounded. A calvary troop came out from nowhere like a whirlwind. If they weren't quick enough to move aside, they could have crashed on the horses.

Ye Xiao frowned.

[They just ran so fast in the town? They didn't make turns or slow down any bit. They just rushed out like that. If I am not this flexible, I guess I could have been killed by them!]

[How could they overwhelm like that?]

[Isn't it bodacious?]

The one who rode in the front was a young man wearing a white suit. He looked handsome but arrogant. His horse was white like snow, big and tall. He kept his nose up and laughed out loud. He looked spirited as he ran across the town center.

Ye Xiao humped.

He seemed to hear people whispering in fear, "Get away... It's the third young lord of Song Clan..."

[The third young lord of Song Clan?]

...

[1] Pistachio is called 'happy nut (开心果)' in Chinese. When it is used to describe someone, it means he or she always make people laugh.

Chapter 988: Implicated?

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts for a while. That young man should be the next generation of Song Jue and his brothers. He was thinking maybe he should ignore what the young man did as respect to his Uncle Song.

[After all, I owe Song Jue so much. He has been taking care of me so well. He was even closer than my father Ye Nantian to me. If I start a fight against Song Clan's people the first time I came, that would be inappropriate.]

He made a sigh and grabbed Han Bingxue's arms to step back quietly.

However, even though Ye Xiao decided to step away considering the old days with Song Jue, the young man, the third young lord of Song Clan, didn't quite agree to keep the peace.

He was a troublemaker!

The good horse of his suddenly neighed and stood up on two feet. It turned around and ran towards Ye Xiao and the other two. Over a dozen other calories turned around with him. They were coming back on them, in an overwhelming way.

However, no matter how overwhelming they thought they were, they were just nothing in Ye Xiao and his fellows' eyes. What surprised them was what happened!

"What is this?" Han Bingxue was surprised, "Do they know me?"

Ye Xiao was speechless. He scolded in a low voice, "I mean... It's fine that you think you are so attractive to all women. Can't you stop your imagination when we are talking about men? What? Did you become homosexual now or something? If you are not, keep quiet. What place do you think we are in? They haven't left this district for their whole lives. How could they know you, brother?"

Han Bingxue stared at Ye Xiao, with his eyes opened widely. He

wanted to argue but couldn't find anything to say. He humped and frowned. "Gosh... It starting to ache again..." The pain on his body started again.

The young lord was moving fast back to them. When his horse almost crashed the three, he finally reined. The horse neighed and stood up again over the three of them.

Ye Xiao's eyes showed up with cold lights. He waved his sleeves and the rolling dust was cleared piled up a small mound beside him.

The young lord of Song Clan was doing something that really started to piss him off.

However, he still didn't want to make any trouble. Otherwise, he wouldn't wave the dust aside. He would return it to the young lord instead, giving the young lord the rudeness back!

"Oh?" The young lord smiled. His eyes were cold as he stared at Ye Xiao. "You are a cultivator? Good. Well done. That was good. Well... are you... from outside?"

Ye Xiao frowned. He started to lose patience. "What is it to do with you?"

"Hahahaha..." The Song Clan young lord laughed wildly. He suddenly stopped and spoke in a vicious and fierce way, "You know what? No matter where you are from, you are in my place now. Everything could be my business as I wish! Do you understand?"

Ye Xiao couldn't help but start to smile.

"Sometimes, life is helpless. No matter how much you want to stay away from troubles, trying to get away as far as you can, troubles just keep coming to get you." Ye Xiao blandly smiled while staring at that young lord from Song Clan. "It is such a sad and helpless thing."

He truly felt helpless. He didn't want to make any trouble, and he did have stepped back from it. It wasn't a big deal to be humiliated

a little bit for the sake of Song Jue.

However, this young lord of Song Clan was definitely courting for death.

He just didn't want to let them go.

Ye Xiao felt embarrassed.

As expected, the young lord of Song Clan laughed out loud. He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Well, I didn't see it. You talk with a full mouth of philosophy, don't you? That's good. Not bad. Come on. Tell me your name. Tell your Uncle Third the name of yours."

He kept waving the whip while he was talking. He was smiling, but deep in his eyes, there was coldness.

[The three fucking outlanders. You want to play in this place? Showing me no respect?]

[Tough? I don't care how tough you are! Just stay as low as you can in front of me!]

[Let me show you one rule here. Don't mess with the young lord of Song Clan!]

When things were getting pretty intense and a fight was about to be started, there was a clear voice sounded behind Ye Xiao loudly, "Song Fei! You just want to make troubles for me! Why do you have to get it on these people? They are from other places. Don't be mean. It's not honorable to humiliate some outlanders, is it?"

That surprised Ye Xiao and the other two.

[Hmm. Something happened, huh? Isn't this a surprise. A bright light in the dark?]

Ye Xiao, who wanted to avoid troubles, had been prepared for a big fight just a moment earlier, not to mention Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue who had really bad tempers. However, when everybody was ready to get a big fight, somebody else spoke.

[A third party appeared?]

[Wait! It seems we are the third party? We got implicated into this?]

They looked to the direction where the voice came. It was a young man wearing clothes of poor quality, carrying a medicine basket on the back. He walked out from behind Ye Xiao. His eyes looked clear and spirited. However, he was skinny. His face was in square shape though.

At the moment, he was glaring at Song Fei, the young man on the horse.

The young man was wearing normal clothes and had a weak cultivation capability. However, he was vigorous and full of courage. He stared at the young lord on the horse without a sense of fear on his face.

Ye Xiao, Xuan Bing, and Han Bingxue noticed something special though. That young man and Song Fei were wearing totally different clothes in different qualities. However, their faces looked similar. They must be related to each other!

They all stopped thinking of giving a lesson to that young stupid lord. They were curious. They wanted to know what was happening and what would happen next.

"Wait. Be patient. Let's see what happens next." It wasn't Ye Xiao speaking. It was Xuan Bing.

Han Bingxue didn't dare to say no. Ye Xiao had the same idea himself, so he agreed. However, Ye Xiao didn't understand why Xuan Bing was showing such a good temper all of a sudden.

He didn't stay with Xuan Bing for a long time. However, he knew that she had a bad temper like a man. He thought that she would definitely beat Song Fei up hard at least. However, she actually decided and even told the other two to stay patient and wait for what would happen next!

He didn't know that Song Clan also had a special meaning for

Bing'er. Ye Xiao was the most important person to Bing'er, but Song Jue was the second. This place was controlled by Song Clan. It was confirmed that the young lord was people of Song Clan. Xuan Bing had to be patient for Song Jue's sake. That was reasonable.

[This is the home of Steward Song...]

Xuan Bing was lost in thoughts.

...

Chapter 989: Song Jue's nephew?

In fact, the story about Song Clan was too difficult for Ye Xiao to figure out on his own!

"Song Xuan! Finally, you came out with guts!" Song Fei laughed. He was extremely arrogant. "I thought you would just stand aside watching me beat these outlanders up. I thought you would just leave with your tail between your legs. Hahaha. Good. Brave. Impressive!"

The three of Ye Xiao understood what was happening from what Song Fei just said.

He messed with Ye Xiao in order to piss off Song Xuan. He must have seen Song Xuan when he ran pass this place, so he turned around and started to bully Ye Xiao and company—at least he believed he could bully them. That was what happened. He didn't mean to truly offend Ye Xiao.

However, because they finally understood why he did it, they felt... that Song Fei was truly a nasty bastard. [Just go directly to Song Xuan if you want to piss him off. Why do this to innocent people?]

[It is lucky that you are messing with us. Ordinary people would definitely be hopeless!]

[Pah! It is not lucky. This is not lucky! You pissed us off! That's not lucky!]

However, Ye Xiao made a sigh. [It doesn't matter whether we are lucky or not. However, you, the third young lord of Song Clan, are quite opposite to lucky! You are absolutely unfortunate. You are haunted by unluckiness!]

In fact, Song Fei was absolutely unlucky. He was unlucky to a world shocking level. His unluckiness was going to collapse the entire bloodline of his clan.

He was just trying to humiliate a brother in his own clan. That was all. However, while he was doing it, he picked three godlike figures that nobody in the world should mess with!

Xuan Bing had spoken. She was strangely patient this time. She wanted to know what was it between the two young men. Apparently, she would definitely lay a hand in this business.

As long as Xuan Bing understood everything, this Song Fei boy would have to worry about his survival... In fact, it might be a mercy to him to just let him die.

Maybe it would just be the beginning for Xuan Bing. She was pissed. Song Fei himself would never be enough to vent her anger. There would be a huge chaos after that! It was predictable!

Song Clan's future was dim! That could be rather pessimistic!

However, when Ye Xiao thought deeper, he bitterly smiled. Song Fei might deserve to die. However, Song Clan was Song Jue's family. Once things went south, he would have to interfere. He couldn't just let Song Clan be extinct!

However, what could he do to stop Elder Xuan Bing? He really wasn't confident!

One might survive fate, but not his own retribution. But if it concerned that young man's entire clan, that would be... too much!

"Whatever you say. This is a business between only you and me inside the clan. Why don't we just move aside and we will talk. These three, they are innocent. You don't need to get them involved. They aren't even natives. You want me. I am here. Just let them go," Song Xuan stepped out and said, with the basket on the back. His clothes were quite dirty. He must have just returned from medicine collection. He didn't want to get away from this situation.

Song Fei laughed. He was staying on the horse like he was naturally in a higher position than others. He squinted at Song

Xuan and said, "Oh, Song Xuan. Listen. Are you telling me you are defending them? Haha. Well then, I should beat them up harder! What? Do you think I follow your orders to do things or to talk? Remember. You are the reason why they will suffer! Do remember!"

He humped with his nose up and said, "Who do you think you are? Nobody!"

"Song Fei! You should better try to overcome your hatred sometime! We live under the watch from heavens! Don't be too pushy!" Song Xuan angrily said.

Song Fei laughed loudly, "What do you mean pushy? I am being pushy! So what? Song Xuan, did you get any medicines at all? Why don't you just give me your basket and let me check how much you have earned for the day?"

Song Xuan took one step back and gritted his teeth in anger. "Song Fei, don't go too far!"

He knew that if he gave the basket to Song Fei, Song Fei would never give it back. All the medicines in the basket would become Song Fei's.

He knew Song Fei was trying to take all his work.

He was in a lower position in the house. He wasn't powerful enough to defeat Song Fei.

Nobody would defend him.

"Oh you don't want to show me? What difference does it make?" Song Fei sneered. "You know what. Even after you hand in everything you collected to the house, you won't get any credit! I can assure that!"

He laughed wildly. "Song Xuan, you used to be the most talented genius in the house. Why do you care about little materials? Look at me. I don't care at all. Every dot has its day. I wonder why do you have to fight against me with! The most talented genius? Pah!"

Song Xuan's eyes looked gloomy.

That was true. He used to be the most talented man in the Song Clan. He had the highest potential among the cultivators in the clan. Even though the Song Clan didn't raise him as the primary disciple, he still had enough resources for cultivation.

He should be the main force of his clan because of his talent. However, something happened. Song Jue made a mistake. It brought a disaster to the entire house. The group which Song Jue used to be a part of fell to the weak side and Song Jue himself was banished.

Song Xuan was a genius, but he was too weak to save the entire group on his own.

However, he didn't give up. His biggest dream was to bring his group to the main position of the clan under his unremitting efforts.

As he had been cultivating so hard, he had been improving greatly. Afterwards, he was far more powerful than the people in the same generation. The clan did value him a lot. His group had become better and better, however, three years earlier, an accident ruined everything he had been working so hard for.

One day, while Song Xuan was concentrating in cultivation, he was attacked by a masked man. That man was vicious and fast. He hit Song Xuan and wanted to kill him too. Within several moves, Song Xuan was beaten so bad. After that, Song Xuan's condition changed. The energy inside him had been reduced. After resting for several years, he was physically recovered. However, his future in cultivation was gone.

Day after day, the group in which Song Xuan was born had a much lower position in the clan. They were so poor that they nearly had to beg for food. His uncle, Song Jue, had returned to the clan. That lit up the light of hope for their group. However, Song Jue was, after all, a sinner of the clan. Besides, Song Jue wasn't the

best cultivator in the clan, so he couldn't change the situation on his own.

That was why the group where Song Jue and Song Xuan was in had always been bullied.

...

Chapter 990: What A Brave Man...

When Song Fei looked at Song Xuan being angry, he truly felt good about it.

Song Xuan used to be in an even higher position in the clan than Song Fei just because of his talent. Song Fei never liked it.

In fact, it was such a huge humiliation to him since he was the eldest son of the clan leader.

However, Song Xuan eventually fell to the bottom. His glory didn't last long.

Whoever in the bottom should be treated as one.

He could do whatever he want on Song Xuan now. All he needed to do was to give an order. He got to do whatever he liked!

Since the day Song Xuan lost his future in cultivation, Song Fei had been bullying him to an unacceptable extent.

After all, Song Fei felt so good about bullying the man who used to be such a genius in the clan. He just could have enough of it.

"What? Do you really think the return of your uncle could actually improve your situation? What a dream! Even if your beloved uncle stands right here right now, what do you think he can do about this? He had come back. So what? Don't you still have to collect medicines? From hopeful to despair, what does it feel to get through all the ups and downs? It must be good for you. Hahaha..."

That made Song Xuan even angrier.

In fact, that not only made Song Xuan anger, it also aroused something in the heart of three people around them. That also led to the unexpected consequence.

Ye Xiao raised his head and he looked so happy when he heard what Song Fei just said. [Song Xuan is Uncle Song's nephew? He

seems to be a righteous man! He is a good man to make friends with!]

[If what Song Fei said is true, I guess Uncle Song didn't have a warm welcome in the clan when he came back. Things didn't work out for him.]

[Hmm... I guess this problem should be solved.]

Ye Xiao was immersed in joy, so he didn't notice Xuan Bing's reaction. In fact, Xuan Bing slightly raised her head too. She suddenly looked at Song Xuan. [Song Xuan... is Uncle Song's nephew?]

[Then... I have no reason to hesitate on standing on his side...]

While they were both thinking, Song Xuan turned around. He looked so disgrace. He looked at Ye Xiao and the other two and spoke with a gloomy face, "My friends, I am sorry that I have gotten you involved. It is the business of our clan. If you don't have any requests, please just leave now. Quick."

He was giving them a strong hint through his eyes. He urged, "Now that this is done. There is no reason to keep staying. Just go get on your own matters now."

He wanted them to leave as soon as possible. He wanted to say 'go as far as you can, as soon as possible'!

"Leave?" Song Fei looked at Ye Xiao with a weird smile, "Where for? Where do you think they should go? Now you stand beside some outsiders to be against my will. What do you mean this is done? You don't get to make the call!"

He looked around at the three people and then stared at Xuan Bing. His eyes lit up. He looked excited. "Well, I must be blind not to find out there is a young lady here? You, come here and take off your mask. Let me see your pretty face."

He kept rubbing his hands excitedly. "Come on. Quick. Show me your face. Let me see if you have a good face that I can play with."

After what Song Fei just said, Song Xuan looked even angrier and... nervous.

He figured this might not end so easily. Things never ended easily when Song Fei was after a woman.

Song Xuan felt frustrated because he knew that he was unable to stop anything. He would have to just watch Song Fei do whatever he wanted to the woman. He was helpless!

However, because of what Song Fei just said, Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were both shocked. Their eyes had almost popped out because of astonishment if not for their eye frames.

If Song Xuan was living under other's roof and lowering his head to the third young lord of Song Clan, Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were truly impressed by the young man on the horse.

[Did he just flirt with Xuan Bing?]

[What a brave man!]

[That was so brave!]

[He is so weak. He is totally nothing! Yet he is actually that brave!]

[Ignorance does make courage!]

[This young man must be so good at making troubles for himself. He is killing it! This must be a world record on seeking death in the history!]

[What he is doing now would definitely impress everybody, even including Wu Fa. Wu Fa may give him a thumbs-up. Good lord. He is bold!]

[He must be the only man in the world and the history who dares to speak like this to Xuan Bing!]

[He must be peerless!]

[He is unique!]

In fact, when Xuan Bing heard what he said, she didn't realize what he actually said. She never thought that anybody in the world dared to speak to her like that!

She looked at Song Fei and said in confusion, "What... What did you just say?"

She thought she had a hallucination!

Of course, she couldn't believe it.

In her entire life... there never was a man who actually said such words to her!

[Did he just tell me to take off the mask so that he can look at my face?]

[So that he could decide whether he will play with my face?]

[Is this...]

She truly thought that she didn't really get what he meant. She couldn't believe somebody just asked her to do such a thing... She was shocked.

[In this area... the Oracle District... the non-cultivation district... there is actually such a bodacious man...]

[I guess I must be underestimating the courage of the people in this place...]

Song Fei was too weak to be so insolent to Xuan Bing. In fact, even if he was as powerful as all men in Song Clan in history together, he still wasn't strong enough to be insolent to Xuan Bing!

"Are you deaf? Or are you pretending to be stupid?" Song Fei didn't say anything yet. It was the guard behind Song Fei who spoke. He was showing a fierce and dark face. He shouted, "My lord wants to see your face. Can't you understand? Don't you know human language?"

Another guard beside him laughed. "Girl, just take off your mask. Show your face to our young lord! Hmm. My lord, is she too ugly

so she doesn't want to show her face? What if her face is so ugly that it scares you? Hmm... Maybe she is so surprised that you actually want to see her face..."

Song Fei laughed out loud. He looked at Xuan Bing in a flirting way and said, "Look at her body. That is perfection. I don't think she can be that ugly. What do you think? At the very least, if she truly has an ugly face, I don't mind. I can't see her face in the dark. A good naked body still serves me well... as long as I put the lights off and hide her face in darkness..."

...

Chapter 991: Fury!

The other guard laughed loudly and said, "My lord, I mean no offense. You have a good point, but I have the exact experience once. I met a woman last time. She looked gorgeous from her back. I just couldn't stop thinking deep into it. However, when I saw her face, I just couldn't 'stand up'... No matter how perfect her body was, I just couldn't get that horrible image of her face out of my head, even in the dark. I truly couldn't get my thing hard... It nearly left me some serious disease after that..."

"Hahaha..." Song Fei laughed wildly. He didn't feel angry at all. His guards started to laugh wildly too.

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue kept looking at Song Fei with admiration in the eyes. In fact, both of them were not only impressed by the young lord, but also all his guards.

There was an old saying that seemed to be quite true. One's servants were always just like the master. The third young lord of Song Clan was such a man with courage. His men were also quite brave. Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue looked at those people who were definitely seeking death. Han Bingxue couldn't help praising them in the heart.

[Holy heavens. These men are unbelievably brave.]

[I am level nine of Dao Origin Stage, one of the strongest cultivator in the world. I just slightly had a small question about Xuan Bing's face as a friend of hers and that brought me into suffering. I am still suffering it till now. It's torturing me.]

[Yet these people, they actually dallied with her in public? Again and again?]

[This must be...]

[They are such brave men!]

[I guess people in the Oracle District may improve slowly in

cultivation, but they improve greatly in bravery. Look at them, they are definitely the boldest people in the entire realm!]

Song Xuan was worried. Ye Xiao felt it was interesting. Han Bingxue was impressed...

Xuan Bing finally realized what Song Xuan truly wanted.

Her sudden fury was nearly powerful enough to tear the entire world apart!

She was going to explode in fury!

When she realized what truly was happening, a mass of cold qi rose up in the entire area. The power of suppression suddenly fell down to the entire place!

It covered everything!

It thoroughly covered everything!

"Ah..."

Somebody exclaimed. Those men suddenly felt like in a world of ice and snow. They felt terrified from deep down their hearts.

At the same time, they felt like they were in hell.

Endless horror, fear, and killing intent crashed on them like flood.

Within seconds, those who had laughed at Xuan Bing all fell down to the floor with fear and pain on their faces. They were totally blank.

Their horses were all bleeding in the eyes, mouth, ears, and nose, and died instantly.

The three guards who had teased Xuan Bing were already lying on the floor. They pissed in their pants because of fear. They couldn't even say a word.

They just kept trembling.

They didn't even have time to feel regret. They were just shocked

and overwhelmed by extreme horror.

"Mer... mercy... Please..." A guard lied down on the floor, trembling. It sounded like it had cost him all the energy to speak out the three words.

Xuan Bing coldly humped.

It was like a thunder striking through the heads of the three guards.

With a clear clicking sound, their heads exploded like watermelons.

Their heads exploded, and the brains spread everywhere!

Song Fei was trembling when he saw what happened.

The only thought he had in mind was, [What the hell have I done... Why would I mess with such a horrible monster?]

He couldn't help thinking about what he had just said about Xuan Bing. He was utterly regretful.

[She didn't even say a word. She didn't make any moves. She just showed a glance and humped, then my men, three level two Dream Origin Stage guards, got killed with their heads exploding in a nasty way!]

When Xuan Bing made that suppression and silenced the entire place, he felt like it was not just a legend. It was a tale to him!

Song Xuan, who witnessed what just happened, was also astonished.

His eyeballs nearly popped out the eye frames. He couldn't believe what he had just seen. He stared at the woman in black suit like his neck was stiff.

[How powerful is she?]

[What is going on?]

[Isn't it too horrible?]

[This...]

He looked at the blood and flesh on the floor and couldn't have any thoughts in mind. He was blank.

"Murder! Murder..." people exclaimed after being shocked for a while. They scattered away like running for their life. Nobody would have thought such a bloody scene would occur when they were just standing there.

People died before any of them thought of leaving.

Three men's heads exploded.

It might be fine if somebody else died in the town, however, people of the land lord's house died! That was serious!

"All of you who are still alive, get up." Xuan Bing loosened the suppression power and coldly said, "Get on your knees on the blood! Kneel in a row!"

"When people of Song Clan come, I wonder what they will do. I wonder how much waves you can stir up! I wonder if you can do anything to stop me!"

She was definitely furious.

She couldn't accept it.

The men who had fallen to the floor but were still alive crawled up and moved to the blood while trembling. All of their faces was pale as they all kneeled down on the blood. They were terrified. They didn't want to become dead cold bodies just because they didn't follow her order.

"Han Bingxue, go watch them. Kill those who kneeled improperly. Just kill. No need to inform me." Xuan Bing gave an order. Han Bingxue was a free labor for her. She would surely make good use of it.

Han Bingxue didn't feel offended at all. He was quite happy to take the job. He grinned and stood out.

He started to yell at those men.

Those men were truly in bad luck...

They had actually insulted Xuan Bing... They vividly showed her how they usually insulted women...

That was something Han Bingxue could never imagine.

This might become an important record in the history of Qing-Yun Realm!

"Brother Ye, what do you have in mind about dealing with these men?" Xuan Bing took a deep breath and walked to Ye Xiao and asked for his opinion.

"Me? What do I have in mind?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Aren't you the one who make decisions here? Why do you ask me?]

Xuan Bing blandly said, "Don't play fool in front of me! Isn't Song Clan related to you at some point?"

...

Chapter 992: Song Clan

Xuan Bing didn't have a good temper. If not for Song Jue, she might just go kill all the people in Song Clan at once.

However, she had to consider Song Jue's situation. She definitely wanted to kill those men, however, it was better to let Ye Xiao make the decision.

Ye Xiao was serious. He looked at Xuan Bing for a while and then smiled. He said, "You truly know me quite well. You know nearly everything about me."

Xuan Bing twisted her lips. [Pah! Idiot! Of course I do! I can recognize you from the ash of your bones! Is there anybody who knows you better than I do in the world? From inside to outside, nobody knows you better than I do!]

She didn't know what Ye Xiao was thinking. He thought that Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu had told Xuan Bing so much about himself. In fact, Xuan Bing knew him so well. She knew him the best in the world!

She was the only one who knew him so well!

"Fine. I will solve this." Ye Xiao nodded.

"Good. However, these men have to die! No matter what your plan is! No negotiation!" Xuan Bing turned around while looking at those who were on their knees. There was a strong killing intent in her eyes!

"Certainly. I won't let go get away from this." Ye Xiao nodded.

He was bearing a full chest of anger. [A bunch of guys like that, weak and soft, actually dares to tyrannize this place?]

[Nobody dares to challenge them? That's annoying!]

[Song Jue's nephew was bullied! This is unacceptable.]

[If not because I have certain connection to Misty Cloud Palace,

Xuan Bing would definitely wipe out the entire Song Clan for what they just did to her. Even if Xuan Bing was generous and merciful, Misty Cloud Palace wouldn't allow such a thing to happen. This area is under the three palaces' control. No one, not even the local power, can mess with their elder! Song Clan should have been wiped out!]

[Song Clan is unlucky but also lucky at the same time!]

...

"My friend, you are Song Xuan. Is that correct?" Ye Xiao looked at Song Xuan, who was walking fast over to Ye Xiao, smiling.

"Yes, I am..." Song Xuan didn't want to have any chitchat. He seemed nervous. "You guys have made a big mistake. Just go now. When our superior cultivators come from the house, you won't be able to leave. You must leave Oracle District as fast as you can. Go. People in this place have natural fear for the outside world. As long as you can go out this area, you get the chance to survive."

He then sighed. He was surprised and helpless.

He thought that the whole thing was just a prank on himself. He could only endure the insult and everything would be in peace again. However, people died. It was unexpected for him. Song Fei had made troubles for him for many times. He didn't want his father and uncles get into trouble too, so he had been enduring it all the time.

However, he never thought Song Fei got himself into such a sticky situation, even though he just wanted to insult Song Xuan at the first place.

The real problem in Song Fei's heart was...

He wondered what the three innocent people should do to get away from this trouble?

He asked them to leave as soon as possible to get out of Oracle District, because it was the only way he had to keep them safe!

For native people in this district, the world outside was full of uncertainness. As long as the three of them could get to the outside world, they could survive this!

The world was too big for the Song Clan. They wouldn't find them out there. That would keep them safe.

However, if they didn't leave, in his opinion, Song Clan, his own clan, would never let them leave safely.

Even though the three were powerful cultivators, in Song Xuan's mind, he didn't believe they could defeat the entire Song Clan, because Song Clan was the most powerful house in Oracle District. He had confidence in his clan's power. He didn't believe the three outsiders could win the fight!

He truly didn't want anything bad to happen on these three innocent people, who only got involved in this situation because of him!

"Thank you for being thoughtful. But we won't leave." Ye Xiao warmly smiled. "We will wait till your people come. We can't just let this end like this."

He smiled. "We need an explanation, for us and for others."

Song Xuan was shocked. He couldn't say a word.

[You have killed three guards and you made the chief's son kneel on the blood. It is a huge humiliation to them already. What explanation do you want?]

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and tapped on Song Xuan's shoulder. "Relax. It's fine."

Of course it was fine. What wrong could it be!

Nothing wrong could happen on the three of them.

In Oracle District, Han Bingxue alone could kill all and conquer all let alone Xuan Bing!

However, Ye Xiao didn't want to expose himself.

He wouldn't step out unless Song Jue showed up.

He was sure Song Jue was having quite a tough time since he was back to his clan.

He reckoned he should take use of what happened and the power of Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue to make some changes in Song Clan.

[This may be a good beginning at some point.]

Ye Xiao thought.

...

Song Clan.

The chief of Song Clan, Song Wuyang, had been having a busy time these days. It had been over one year since they had collected something truly valuable. If they couldn't get enough valuable medicine materials, they couldn't exchange for enough cultivation materials.

Tens of thousands men in the clan all went out for medicines. However, none of them collected anything valuable. Without the cultivation materials they needed, the clan would end up collapsed. Song Clan would only have a gradual downfall.

The materials were in the three palaces' hands. The great palaces were some of the most powerful forces in the realm. They got all the resources Song Clan needed. The only way Song Clan could get what they wanted was to give the three palaces a certain amount of valuable medicines in exchange. Otherwise, the three palaces wouldn't just give them the cultivation resources. That's for sure.

Song Clan had thousands of miles of land in Oracle District. It was a big clan. They had collected countless materials from their mountains in the past, however, day after day, the medicines were decreasing. They were falling.

They thought the medicine materials were inexhaustible, but they were wrong. There was no such thing. After thousands of

years of extraction, Song Clan's mountains had been losing value.

They used to collect lots of spiritual medicines just by wandering around the mountains.

However, they had to particularly go to the cliff or deep into the forests to find what they wanted. Most of the land couldn't provide what they needed anymore.

That truly drove Song Wuyang, the chief of Song Clan, crazy.

...

Chapter 993: Condemnation

"What should we do, Chief?"

"What do you think can I do? The only thing we can do is not to waste any more time. Urge our people to work harder on medicine collection. If the situation lasts till after this year, we will totally lose hope." Song Wuyang sighed. "It is late autumn now. No matter what, we have to find at least one Regeneration Ink Lotus before the snow covers the mountains, or a Heaven Scent Flower. Either of these... can bring us to a better situation."

"Chief, what do you say if we send Song Jue out to do collection too..." It was a middle-aged man who had mouse whiskers on his mouth. He was trying to probe about what the chief had in mind. As he spoke, he squinted at the chief's face.

"Song Jue..." Song Wuyang frowned and sighed. He shook his head and said, "Forget it. Who can command that man, though? I am already satisfied that he doesn't make any more troubles for the clan. We don't have much time now. I can't risk it..."

He seemed quite upset about it. Song Jue truly didn't have a good temper in the clan. It had been less than a year since he had returned to the clan, yet he had already brought lots of troubles in the house.

When Song Jue was told that his older brother got rejected and his nephew became a useless man, he nearly burned the entire house because of fury.

Luckily, the gramps of the clan solved the problem. Otherwise, Song Clan's house might have already become a ruin... Song Jue had truly spilled lots of fuels around the house.

Nobody really liked Song Jue. He was such a troublemaker... Nobody knew what to do about him.

They would all sigh and think, [Why can't you just stay in the

lower world? You can be king down there. You can do whatever you want. Why do you have to come back? Don't you know that nobody likes you here in the clan...]

In fact, not all of them disliked Song Jue.

Song Jue's elder brother, Song Sheng, who used to be the one who should become chief, was definitely supporting Song Jue. Song Jue made a mistake in the old days and he did make a big trouble for the clan. Song Sheng got involved so he lost the inheritance.

Song Sheng was innocent. That was true.

People in Song Clan had divided into two groups because of what Song Jue did. They were hostile to each other.

Song Jue made a mistake. That was true. However, they could just punish Song Jue. Yet they deprived Song Sheng's right to inherit the clan.

Song Xuan used to be a young talented cultivator in the clan. Now he suddenly became a useless man. There was no evidence, but people knew who did this to Song Xuan. That sharpened the discord between the two groups. Somebody destroyed a young man who could have brought a better future to the clan just for power?

Song Jue was a powerful cultivator. He was fairly qualified to attend the clan's meeting, however, he refused to. He even said something impertinent. 'My brother is not the chief! I won't attend the meeting without him being the chief!' He just wouldn't give in to the other group.

In his eyes, they were all traitors!

He turned against all of them!

People in the clan were all provoked.

But they could do nothing.

Song Jue was level seven of Dream Origin Stage now. He was one

of the best cultivators in the clan. Song Clan was lacking powerful men at the moment. They couldn't just give him up.

While the meeting was ongoing, urgent footsteps suddenly came over. A man rushed into the meeting hall and said, "Chief... We got a problem..."

"What makes you terrified like this!" Song Wuyang frowned, "No matter what it is, you shouldn't just rush into the meeting like this! Don't you know that?"

"I know... But... Our young lord, Song Fei, is captured in the south entrance by some powerful men... Our guards... three of our guards are dead..."

The man looked panic. He was sweating.

"What?"

With an exclamation, people in the meeting hall all stood up.

[Song Fei is captured? Three of our men died?]

[How is that possible?]

"Who are they? Audacious! Did they eat a leopard's gall?" [1] Song Wuyang slapped on the table angrily, "This is Song Clan's place! Who dare to be so audacious?"

"They are from the outside world... Two men and a woman. They didn't try to leave... It seems they are waiting for us to send people over..." The man was sweating. It wasn't far from the south entrance, but he nearly exhausted himself to run back.

"Let's go!" Song Wuyang was pissed when he was told the three murderers didn't even run away after killing their men. "There are all kinds of weird people in the world. I wonder who they are to dare play such a scene in Song Clan's place!"

People all prepared to go.

"What led to such a situation?"

"Why would they kill our men?"

"What's the reason?"

Some of them started to ask the question while they were getting out of the meeting hall.

However, the man who reported didn't witness it. He didn't really know what it was about, so he didn't give them answers. However, some of them, who were in the opposite group of Song Wuyang, had the same thought in their minds.

[It must be Song Wuyang's stupid son. He must have made trouble again.]

[Otherwise, such a thing could never happen.]

They all knew Song Fei's temper.

He was an arrogant, rude and selfish coward.

Three cultivators killed Song Clan's people and actually didn't try to leave this district...

They must have a good reason!

Some reckoned that these three people must be powerful since they were from the outside world!

If what Song Fei did wasn't too unacceptable, the three superior cultivators might just ignore him. After all, they were powerful cultivators. They didn't need to bother.

Yet they stayed... That meant Song Fei had made quite a big trouble this time.

They guessed the three outsiders must be waiting for an explanation.

They were almost correct. What they guessed was almost the truth.

Some of them sighed and thought, [Song Fei is son of our chief. Compared to Song Xuan in the old days, he was just like the dirt on

the ground. Song Xuan is like the cloud in the sky.]

Song Xuan used to be a talented and polite young man with perseverance. He should have been a perfect heir. The heir they had now, Song Fei, was just like mud that could never be held up to the wall. [2]

[To destroy a talented man and replace him with an idiot just for his own interests. Song Clan is bound to collapse for that.] Many of them had the same thought.

People of Song Clan walked to the south entrance fast.

Before they even arrived, they heard somebody shouting and yelling from distance.

...

[1] When you say somebody eat leopard's gall, it means he or she is too audacious.

[2] To describe somebody who is useless and hopeless to change.

Chapter 994: White and Black

A cold voice was shouting.

"Kneel still!"

"All of you!"

"Bastards! Don't you even know how to kneel? What? Have you been fed with sh*t since you were born? Look at you! I guess you can just be fed with the cold sh*t after others enjoy the warm!"

"Your knees! Bastard! Your knees! Keep them in a row! You are fifteen men! Kneel in a straight row! Understand? Do you understand human language? Bastard! Are you doing this on purpose? Or are you deaf?"

- Pah! - That was a slap on the face.

- Puff! - The one who got slapped seemed to spit out something.

"Kneel straight! Understand? Keep your shoulders in the same height! Here! Keep it a straight line! Your heads! Chests!"

- Pah! -

"I said kneel straight! Look at yourself! Don't you know how to kneel straight? Don't you understand? Keep your chest up! Raise your heads! Keep your legs straight! Kneel on the floor!"

- Pah! -

"And you are the fxcking heir of Song Clan, son of your chief? How can you be so stupid? Did you hit your head and stir your brain into a tofu when you were born?"

"What are you looking at? I said your head! Do you have a brain in it? Or is your brain just rotted?"

...

Song Wuyang and his people finally arrived, and that was the first thing they saw.

It was like the picture of hell for Song Wuyang.

Three dead bodies were lying on their own blood. There were flies and other kinds of insects on the bodies. Blood and flesh were everywhere on the floor.

Fifteen men kneeled in a straight row on the blood.

It was such a tidy and disciplined queue.

Their chins, heads, chests, backs, shoulders, knees... were all in a straight line. They just kneeled on the floor like zombies that didn't dare to move a bit.

Their faces were all pale and full of terror...

They were all trembling. Apparently, they were terrified.

Some of them had even wet their pants. They couldn't control themselves anymore because of the fear, yet none of them dared to move. They were just staying in a straight line...

One mistake could get them killed... None of them dared to take that risk!

Song Wuyang nearly passed out when he saw it.

His son, his beloved son, Song Fei, was one of the fifteen!

He was the first in the line.

He was kneeling straight.

When he saw his father, he saw hope. He saw his savior. He shouted loudly in a deplorable voice, "Father! Help..."

Before he finished, Han Bingxue humped and stepped over to slap hard on his face.

- Pah! - Loud and clear. It stopped Song Fei from saying whatever he wanted to say!

"Who told you to shout? Bastard! How dare you ruin the perfect line! I think you must be thirsty for death! You know what? Not to mention your father, even your father's father, your great

grandfather, or all your ancestors, none of them can help you!"

Han Bingxue was so fierce. At this moment, he played quite well as a henchman who was being rude and overbearing.

Song Wuyang's face turned dark. His sharp eyes stared at Han Bingxue and he said, "Who are you? How dare you insult our man? What do you want?"

Han Bingxue laughed loudly and said, "What? Oh! I insulted your man? My god! I am so scared! That is a sin! I can't commit such sin..."

He clapped his own chest and acted like he was scared, "Oh... I am so scared..."

However, he surely wasn't really scared at all!

He was playing with it! He was fooling Song Wuyang! He was enjoying it.

Song Wuyang was a chief of a big clan. Of course, he got the sarcasm. He was furious.

At the same time, somebody started to tell him what had happened. It was quite simple after all. It just took a few words to tell the truth.

Song Wuyang looked even angrier. The others were right. It was because of his son. His son bullied his own brother in the clan. That was disgraceful. Not only that, he even kept messing with innocent people. That was rude and stupid...

What happened to his son was right. He deserved it.

Half of the men who followed Song Wuyang seemed quite angry. They shouted and yelled, asking the three people to let go of their young lord. The other half were just staying aside with dark faces, staring at Song Wuyang. They were waiting to see what Song Wuyang would do to solve such a problem.

[Your son is stupid. He humiliated others but turned out to be

humiliated by them. He disgraced our clan. This isn't finished yet. Nobody knows how big this trouble can be. I wonder what you will do, as our chief?]

Some of them were worried. [If Song Wuyang still insists to support Song Fei on this matter, Song Clan may collapse someday soon.]

"As the chief of our clan, I have already known the truth. This should be our own business in our clan. It has nothing to do with you. How dare you interfere in our clan? Just because of such a small problem, you killed three of our men! How audacious! Yet you didn't stop after taking three lives away! Why do you have to insult our clan like this? You are from now on Song Clan's sworn enemies!" Song Wuyang was shaking because of anger. "You bunch of bastards!"

"Guys! Go get them! Kill if they resist!"

Song Wuyang eventually gave the order. He wanted everybody to know that he would stand on his son's side no matter what unacceptable thing his son had done.

He just had to protect his son.

What he said was obviously making white into black. He wasn't trying to be reasonable at all. He figured he could win this with his power. He didn't even look at Song Xuan, who used to be the most talented man, as if he didn't see him. He glanced at him and looked disgusted.

[That bastard is why my son had gotten into such a big trouble!]

[When this is solved, I will make you beg for death!]

[Not only you, but also your uncles, your father! Everybody in your group! I want you all to suffer!]

"Hold on!" Among the crowd of Song Clan, a middle-aged man stepped out. He looked at Song Wuyang and spoke in a deep voice, "Chief, I think we all know the truth now. Song Fei asked for this

himself. We don't want our man suffer such an insult, but we should talk to the three over there in a friendly way. Why do you have to twist the truth and make a ridiculous reason out of it? Isn't it a disgrace to our clan?"

The middle-aged man looked serious. "Chief, are you going to abandon the reputation of our clan? Something that has lasted for thousands of years in the history!"

...

Chapter 995: Killing God Descended

Dozens of people who stood behind the middle-aged man nodded to agree.

They knew that the outsiders might have gone too far on this, but truth was the truth. The outsiders didn't come to make troubles themselves. They just did it as a response to the mistake Song Clan's man had made.

Besides, Song Fei bullied Song Xuan. No matter how low Song Xuan stayed in the clan, Song Xuan was still his brother in the clan. These men of Song Clan felt upset in their hearts!

If Song Clan started the fight in spite of the truth, these people would feel utter regret and shame.

Song Wuyang was furious. He shouted, "How did I make white into black? Didn't they kill our men? Didn't they insult Fei-er on the street? The truth is right here! Third Elder, I wonder when did we start to be so soft? Do you think we should accept the humiliation to our clan?"

Song Wuyang saw his son being slapped and insulted. He was already there, yet the outsiders still didn't set his son free. His son was still being insulted and slapped. His heart was going to explode with anger.

He really wanted to rescue his beloved son and ignore everything else. He didn't care who was right and who was wrong.

At the moment, Ye Xiao suddenly smiled in a weird way. He blandly said, "I see. In your opinion, Clan Chief Song, no matter who is right and who is wrong, we will have to free your son?"

Song Wuyang angrily said, "Not only that! You have to free my son and you must pay for what you have done to him! People in the Song Clan are not just somebody you can humiliate!"

The smile on Ye Xiao's face became even weirder. Ye Xiao said,

"Chief Song, I guess I get what you mean now. Even though you know that it is your son who has done injustice, that your son plays violence and bullies the weak, you still will defend him? With connivance? You would give up your life to protect the honor, which you insist so badly, of your clan?"

"People will have a just conclusion about who stands right!" Song Wuyang didn't change the expression on his face. "You are humiliating Song Clan in public. You have to give an explanation on this!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled and shrugged. "Now I fully understand what you mean. I am speechless."

He nodded and continued, "Do all the others agree to you? Do they all have the same opinion? Do they all support you, Chief?"

"Pah! I will never!" On the other side, an old man shouted in anger with a red face, "It is clear that our man has done wrong to them! Justice long lives in our hearts! We can't make the wrong into right! Somebody is twisting the truth while the truth is so clear in front of us. I feel ashamed to be in the same clan with him!"

As he said so, people of Song Clan separated into two groups, with clearly two opposite opinions.

Ye Xiao saw it and nodded. He smiled to Han Bingxue and said, "They have made their choice. Just do whatever you should now."

Han Bingxue laughed loudly and spoke in a deep voice, "I have traveled the world. Now, I am going to do something just for the sake of the innocent people. It's a pity though, that the opponent is too useless!"

Xuan Bing's eyes were full of coldness. Her face looked cold. She didn't say a word, yet she was covered with huge murderous qi.

Han Bingxue drew out a white long sword with a black handle! - Clang! -

That was exactly the famous Mountain Ice Sword

The qi of the sword rushed up into the sky. At that moment, the coldness filled the world! That ice cold qi clearly showed everybody who this man was.

Many women had such a kind of qi, yet only one man in the world had it! He was the only man in the history who had such gelid cold qi!

"Han Bingxue!"

"He is Han Bingxue!"

"Frost Sword Han Bingxue is back?"

People in Song Clan were all terrified as if their souls were gone.

They were in Oracle District, but they were not blocked out. They knew the powerful cultivators in the world at least.

It was a basic lesson for people in the martial world to know the names of the powerful figures. People in Oracle District particularly needed to know it. A cultivator of level one or two of Dao Origin Stage was already a monster for them. Han Bingxue was a famous level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator.

They should better go kill themselves if they didn't know Han Bingxue's name!

To mess with a super powerful figure like Han Bingxue meant their clan was going to be doomed!

However, what happened now...

Song Wuyang was speechless. He looked at Han Bingxue and couldn't believe what he had seen. He could never imagine that his son actually messed with such a killing god!

Frost Sword, Han Bingxue, who had been missing for a long time in the martial world!

He was acting like a sneaky lackey... yet it turned out he was the

legendary cultivator, the man who was cold like snow, isolated and brilliant Frost Sword, Han Bingxue!

They even suspected that somebody was pretending to be Han Bingxue here.

Song Wuyang truly hoped that he was a fake Han Bingxue. Even though he knew it was hardly possible, but he just couldn't help having the hope. He forced himself to believe in such an assumption. If that man was a fake Frost Sword, Song Clan would remain safe again. They could even help to catch this sneaky lackey and become friends with the real Frost Sword...

Unfortunately, the cold qi that gathered around Han Bingxue proved this conjecture wrong. It took away Song Wuyang's last hope in the heart!

As the cold qi rolled over, everybody felt like being naked in the icy world. The cold air was invading their bodies. In a short time, their faces turned pale because of the coldness!

No matter in what cultivation level they were, they were all suffering the same. The three most powerful men in Song Clan, the three elders, who were level one of Dao Origin Stage, didn't feel any better than others. They were shaking with pale faces. There was frost on their hair and eyebrows.

Nobody suspected Han Bingxue's identity now.

Such power, such feeling, nobody except Han Bingxue himself could make it!

The legendary super powerful cultivator had come to their district!

In fact, even if he wasn't Han Bingxue, Song Clan shouldn't mess with him either. He was obviously powerful enough to kill them all. No matter who he was, his power wouldn't lie! It made no difference whether he was Han Bingxue or not!

"Wait... Master Han! Show mercy, please!" Song Wuyang was

shaking. However, when he saw Han Bingxue raise up the long sword and ready to cut his son into halves, he shouted and tried to be brave.

Han Bingxue's sword stopped in the air. He tilted his head looking at Song Wuyang and said, "What are you shouting for? I am just going to kill a piece of shxt in the world! What a good thing to do! Shut your mouth and let me finish this. If you dare to interrupt again, I don't mind if I need to kill a few more. Do you want more people to die besides your son? If you do, just say it!"

...

Chapter 996: Kill!

Han Bingxue had no idea what Xuan Bing wanted to do. However, he knew exactly what Ye Xiao wanted.

Now, everything was clear on the table. He had lost the patience to talk to those men. Everything should go as Ye Xiao wished.

Nobody could stop it.

Clean in Song Clan!

He would kill those who stopped it and those who attempted to!

Everybody from Song Clan, no matter on Song Wuyang's side or on the other, was shocked.

They had seen a quite bloody scene when they arrived. They had guessed that it must be Song Fei who started this all. They got to know the outsiders didn't prepare to leave after killing three men, so they guessed the outsiders must be confident. They had thought that the three of them must be someone special, however, no matter how they guessed, they could have never thought of Han Bingxue!

Who was Han Bingxue?

He was a powerful figure known to the entire Qing-Yun Realm. Song Clan couldn't afford to mess with such a figure. In fact, they didn't even have the chance to fawn on such a figure. However, the truth was, they were actually against such a figure now! That was bad.

It was totally a preview of their collapse!

The two groups of Song Clan were now having the same thought in mind. That was united, ironically. [We are done! We are so done!]

They were not being too pessimistic though. Song Clan was a big clan who ruled a certain area of the district, but they were not the

most powerful one. If Han Bingxue wanted the entire Song Clan dead, it wouldn't take him much effort to do it!

It was just a piece of cake!

"Mercy..." Song Wuyang shouted with tears on his face, "Master Han, Master Han... Please... Show mercy... My son didn't mean it. He made a mistake. You have punished him already. He knows now. He won't do it again. He will change. It is such a good thing to let a young man change for good. He doesn't deserve to die... Please... It is said we should forgive those ignorant..."

Song Wuyang was utterly stunned. He kept saying some incoherent words, trying to save his son. However, it just didn't make sense. Han Bingxue wanted to kill his son even more after listening to his nagging! That was so annoying!

However, Han Bingxue didn't get to make the decision. He had to stop for a while!

Han Bingxue blandly said, "Shut up!"

He then looked at Ye Xiao and asked loudly, "Boss, what do you say?"

It was unnecessary to ask Ye Xiao though. Han Bingxue knew that it wouldn't change. Those men were all going to die for sure. Han Bingxue asked Ye Xiao just to show respect and to scare the people of Song Clan.

However, it did dramatically bring horror to the crowd!

Who was Han Bingxue?

He was one of the most powerful figures in the realm!

Then who was his boss? How powerful could his boss be?

Song Clan had been worrying about how to survive Han Bingxue's anger. For them, Han Bingxue was such a super powerful cultivator. However, unexpectedly, the young man over there was actually even more horrible! He was Han Bingxue's boss!

If Han Bingxue didn't shout it out, nobody would believe that!

However, it was the truth! They had to believe what they had heard from Han Bingxue!

They all looked at Ye Xiao like looking up at the peak of a great mountain!

Ye Xiao understood it. He figured he should go on the pretending. He turned over to Xuan Bing and said, "Boss, what do you say?"

Song Clan's men were stunned again!

They nearly all passed out at the same time.

[Han Bingxue's boss... just called this woman in black what?]

[Boss!]

[Han Bingxue's boss' boss!]

[And Song Fei... just insulted... her?]

[Song Fei humiliated the boss of Han Bingxue's boss?]

Everybody of Song Clan looked at Song Fei, who was on his knees on the floor. They looked like they were going to swallow Song Fei alive. [You bastard! You just sent the entire clan to hell...]

If not that the three super powerful figures were still there, they would have swallowed Song Fei, their own man, in pieces!

Xuan Bing rolled up her eyes. She was bored and annoyed!

Of course, she knew what Ye Xiao wanted to do.

However, she also knew that Ye Xiao could totally be the one who would make decisions. Nothing would go wrong. No troubles would be left in the future. It wouldn't be a problem even if he wanted all those men to die.

However, Ye Xiao just led the decision to her.

She understood why Ye Xiao did this. First, Ye Xiao knew that she would never let those men live. He gave her the chance to

make the call as a favor. Technically speaking, it wasn't quite a favor to her, but she got it!

Second, the most important one, Song Jue was Ye Xiao's uncle. It was undeniable!

He was about to meet Song Jue again. Even though those men were unforgivable, they were still people from the Song Clan. Ye Xiao had to show respect to Song Jue. Besides, he needed to make use of this matter to push Song Jue to the chief's chair.

That was why Ye Xiao let Xuan Bing make the decision.

'It is Xuan Bing who wants your men dead, not me. I can't help, even though I want to...'

Ye Xiao felt so good about it at the moment. He obviously got away from it. He got what he wanted, but Xuan Bing became the one to be blamed.

Xuan Bing had cursed him quite badly in her mind. [You little bastard. You step away from this as if you are the good guy and I have to be the bad guy...]

[You don't want to piss Song Jue. I don't either!]

[Uncle Song is also my good friend! He is the man who treated me second best in the world, while you are the best! I have to consider for him!]

[You better wait and see how I will give you some real painful lesson, kiddo!]

[Fine. I do insist that those men should die. Just let things go as you wish for now!]

Xuan Bing stared at Han Bingxue and said angrily, "Are you stupid? Don't you understand human language anymore? Do it quick! What? You want to serve them like they are your ancestors or what?"

...

Chapter 997: We Are Destined

Han Bingxue had been pretentious and that, in some point, he was why things would go to such a situation. Xuan Bing wouldn't get mad at Ye Xiao. She also needed to show respect to Song Jue, so she vented her anger on poor Han Bingxue.

Those men who were meant to die were nothing in Xuan Bing's eyes. She wouldn't even bother talking to them!

Han Bingxue was suddenly shouted at. He trembled. He felt like he got kicked by a horse when he was trying to kiss its ass. He felt upset and also angry, so he became even more fierce. He shouted furiously, "Look how you got me shouted at! You blind bloody useless bastards! It is a pollution to the world to keep you alive in the world! You are useless!"

He swayed his sword and a white dazzling light shot out from the sword.

Blood splashed in the air... Cold wind was blowing... The world was in misery...

The men exclaimed. Song Fei and his men who had been kneeling on the ground were all beheaded.

They died!

Song Wuyang watched as his beloved youngest son was decapitated. Song Fei's eyes were still looking at his father when his head got chopped off. He was silently begging for his father's help.

The head was rolling in the air and the eyes were still full of hope for the savior...

Song Wuyang exclaimed loudly and then passed out.

"He asked for it!" Xuan Bing's eyes were emotionless. She just watched it happen indifferently.

She didn't explain anything. She didn't think it was necessary.

He was killed. That was it.

Why would a human explain why he killed an ant?

However, Ye Xiao was emotional.

Song Fei had been bullying around under his father's protection. He must have done the same thing to others many times. That was why he looked so experienced about it. Many people must have suffered because of him.

Song Fei had been so audacious all the time because somebody got his back. He would never show mercy or kindness to anybody. Not before, not in the present, and not in the future.

What if Song Fei didn't humiliate Xuan Bing but a beautiful innocent girl? How would things end like? It was obvious.

Most importantly, Xuan Bing hated those who begged in front of the strong men yet... insulted the weak women! She hated them most!

She would kill every man like that!

She would even wipe out his family and kill all the people in his clan! She wouldn't spare any of them!

"That Song Clan chief..." Xuan Bing frowned and looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and killing intent gradually showed up in his eyes. He frowned and said, "He is the reason why that Song Fei would be like that. I don't think we should keep the father alive!"

He was always a decisive man. He barely hesitated when things were obvious.

He successfully shocked the entire Song Clan. Next, he decided not to let the chief of Song Clan live any longer. The chief would be a huge trouble for Song Jue.

However, he didn't want to kill him now.

There were, after all, different ways to take one's life. He had to consider the current situation when he made the decision to kill. If he did it now, he wouldn't get what he wanted in full!

Song Clan's people were panicking. They finally realized what had truly happened after all. If they didn't do anything, they might just be waiting for death. They knew there was little they could do, but they realized that they had to do something!

They wouldn't sacrifice their lives to try to win a fight though. They knew that they were far too weak to get to that point. Even if they all died fighting, Han Bingxue would still be unharmed. Their death would mean nothing at all.

What they did was just... they gathered over and started to beg, "Han... Master Han..."

They were talking to Han Bingxue, but actually looking at Ye Xiao. They didn't dare to look at Ye Xiao too obviously though. They just glanced at him from time to time while begging... They figured Ye Xiao was a man who was much more horrible than Han Bingxue...

He was Han Bingxue's boss.

Ye Xiao could have told them that he was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage, even though he was Han Bingxue's boss. He could tell them that they should just beg Han Bingxue!

However, even if he did, they wouldn't believe it. They believed Han Bingxue's boss had to be a horribly powerful figure!

"Things today..." Song Clan's elders were all there. They were told what had happened and they saw the bodies. They were stunned.

When one was making a mistake, he or she should better know who was the opponent.

A mistake against a powerful figure could get the entire clan wiped out!

No mercy!

"What things! Those whom I just killed couldn't understand my words! Don't you understand my words too? I said it! My boss makes the decision! How many times do you want me to say it? Even if I am patient enough, my sword doesn't have any patience!" Han Bingxue was making a good-looking posture like a hero. - Clang! - He put the sword back to the scabbard.

Ye Xiao twisted his mouth.

[He just can't give up being pretentious all the time. He is hopeless. Nobody can change him. I am truly speechless about it.]

Han Bingxue was a pretentious prick and Ye Xiao was speechless about it. However, nobody in the Song Clan dared not to listen to him!

Ye Xiao saw those men coming over to him instead, so he smiled blandly. "I met Song Xuan on the way. I guess we are destined to meet. I decided to help him."

When they were waiting for the leadership of Song Clan to come, he had checked on Song Xuan's wound. It was fine. He was relieved. Song Jue's nephew was badly ill, but it wasn't a big problem for Ye Xiao. In other words, it was totally not a problem to them when they had a supreme dan bead.

People in the Song Clan was happy about it.

[He thinks Song Xuan is destined to meet him?]

[This man, who is even more powerful than Han Bingxue, actually favors Song Xuan?]

People in the Song Clan all knew whom to choose now. Song Fei had brought a big mess to the clan, so Song Wuyang's group was falling down. Song Xuan, on the other hand, actually got a super

powerful support.

Song Xuan was backed by somebody who was one of the most powerful figures in the entire Qing-Yun Realm.

...

Chapter 998: Turn a Stone into Gold

Which group should the people in Song Clan choose? That was an easy decision to make!

They had the same choice!

Song Xuan was surprised! He raised his head and looked at Ye Xiao! He couldn't believe what Ye Xiao just had said!

He couldn't believe this generous and handsome young master actually... favored him!

He had been there since everything started to happen. Song Fei came and bullied him. Song Wuyang and the others came but never looked at him in the face.

For Song Xuan, no matter how ambitious he was, he was a useless man with a useless body. He didn't know what he could actually do.

However, things changed so fast.

Was there really a pie in the sky?

It wasn't a pie anymore. It was something divine. It was an opportunity for him to rise up!

"As a clan, internal conflict is always a reason to collapse." Ye Xiao blandly said, "I am in my own clan too. I know how difficult it is to live in a clan with all kinds of filthy stuff. I just cannot bear it."

Ye Xiao had already sent out his spiritual mind to search the entire Song Clan house. He had located Song Jue already.

Uncle Song was having drinks and a plate of peanuts somewhere. He knew there were people dead and his clan needed more men to support, however, he didn't care about it.

He looked indifferent.

He just ignored it all.

Ye Xiao made a sigh. [It seems Uncle Song has given up on his own clan.]

[I don't mind. I know how to bring you up again.]

"You are absolutely right about it, Master. You pointed out the main problem of the Song Clan indeed," the third elder of Song Clan spoke with respect.

He was so humble. He fully agreed with Ye Xiao!

"Song Xuan, come over." Ye Xiao took out a jade bottle and casually poured out two dan beads. "Swallow them now."

Song Xuan didn't hesitate and immediately took the two dan beads.

Under the watch of those men of Song Clan, a miracle happened.

Song Xuan, the fallen genius of Song Clan, who had become a useless man, after taking two normal-looking dan beads, was fully recovered in his Jing and Mai system! It only took him the time of a pot of tea!

He was even better than he used to be!

He even had a better potential than before!

If it wasn't a miracle, it must be his beautiful dream!

Since Erhuo hatched, it became even better at making dan beads. The dan beads it made were much better in efficacy and also in concealment. The dan beads Ye Xiao gave the three great elders before and the dan bead he just gave Song Xuan which repaired Jing and Mai were highly secluded. Only those who had great sensation could get to know the level of the dan beads. It kept other people from having greedy intent on it!

Ye Xiao was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage. He had just shown his wonderful dan beads in front of the men of Song Clan. If Han Bingxue wasn't here with Ye Xiao, many of them might think

about robbing Ye Xiao for the dan beads!

However, they could only feel jealous about Song Xuan's wonderful opportunity and be in admiration to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao, a young man, casually gave Song Xuan some super powerful dan beads with marvelous capacity. They reckoned he must be someone with a really powerful background!

They surely didn't know how powerful his background was. They were sure it must be really powerful!

After seeing what he did, all they had in mind was a few words, 'turning a stone into gold'. That seemed to be a skill of god.

What happened next changed their entire notion of the world. Han Bingxue stepped out and said, "Since the moment I saw this young man, I know he must be talented. He is a young cultivator with a great potential. Since you are destined to be favored by my boss, let me teach you a cultivation method, give you a sword art, pass you a palm art, and offer you a footwork art... Hmm... I will also instruct you a secondary fist art."

People of the Song Clan were all shocked!

[What... what the hell? That is a full tuition, isn't it? Is Han Bingxue going to accept Song Xuan as his personal disciple?]

[Oh my heavens. Song Xuan is such a lucky man!]

[He is not just boosted in one time! He is stepping up to the almighty heaven!]

[Did he save the entire world from some fatal disaster in his previous life or something? How could he be blessed like this?]

Ye Xiao was speechless and awkward.

The only thought he had right now was to beat Han Bingxue up real hard. [What a fool... Why does he have to talk like that? Yeah a cultivation method, give a sword art, pass a palm art, offer a footwork art, and instruct him a fist art... Really?]

"Oh! I guess I finally get to know the real you today, Master Han. You have such a broad vocabulary! How come?" Ye Xiao pretended to smile, looking at Han Bingxue with fierceness and anger in the eyes.

Han Bingxue coughed and casually said, "Well. It must be fate that brought us here. I guess me and the young man are destined to meet too."

Ye Xiao felt embarrassed.

[Damn it, Han Bingxue. Are you out of your mind? I am being nice to Song Xuan, not just because he is a good man. I do this for Uncle Song too! It has nothing to do with you! Can't you stop talking like me? Are you crazy!]

He couldn't say it out though. In fact, he thought maybe Han Bingxue would still talk like that if he said it out. Han Bingxue might probably think, [I don't know Song Jue, but I like Song Xuan. I want him to be good. You favor him. Why can't I? I purely favor him. That's more sincere than you!]

Ye Xiao had to accept it. He who was shameless was powerful. What a truth!

...

The next moment, lots were being done in the Song Clan.

Song Wuyang's people were all cleaned up. Some were killed, while some were imprisoned. That was over a thousand people.

They were all named after Song. They were people of the Song Clan after all. There were even more people who just worked for the Song Clan.

When Song Clan announced to do so, something happened in the town that made people of the Song Clan blush. Citizens in the town started to set off firecrackers to celebrate it. There were a few people at the beginning, but then more and more followed. Within thousands of miles, people started to celebrate the good news!

It looked like celebrating the new year.

...

Chapter 999: Uncle Song Jue

People in the area that was ruled by the Song Clan celebrated the collapse of Song Wuyang's force. Those who had been bullied and suppressed by Song Wuyang's men were all so excited about how heavens brought them justice.

Some people went to the gate of the Song Clan house and kowtowed to the elders to show their gratitude.

The leadership of Song Clan just felt utterly ashamed.

Before this, they knew Song Wuyang and his men were not being nice to the citizens. They just didn't know it was so serious. They didn't know people hated them so much.

When the elders saw the people coming to show gratitude continually, they felt so disgraced. They wondered why the Song Clan, which used to be the protector of this land, had become a local tyrant to the people?

They even needed some outsiders to correct their faults and kill Song Wuyang and his men. The internal conflict could never work out a better outcome. Justice might have never arrived in the clan.

They felt ashamed to accept the gratitude of the people they should have been protecting.

While the elders were sitting there being kowtowed, they felt uncomfortable...

The longer they stayed in such an atmosphere, the nicer they were when they looked at Song Xuan.

[Good kid. He has a bright future.]

Suddenly, Ye Xiao, the powerful and mysterious man in the elders' eyes, abruptly asked something that the elders would never thought of!

"Is Uncle Song, Song Jue, in the house?" Ye Xiao smiled and

asked, "If he is, could you please tell him I want to meet him? I should go pay him a visit since he is older than me. But... I don't think the current situation allows me to. Please, can you send for him?"

"Song Jue? Uncle Song?" The elders nearly got their eyes popped out of their eye frames. They looked at Ye Xiao and couldn't believe what he had said!

After a while, they were enlightened. [This young man acted against Song Wuyang and cured Song Xuan... because he knew Song Jue!]

[Why does Song Jue have such a powerful friend?]

When they looked at Song Xuan, their eyes had different lights now.

Apparently, what Ye Xiao had done was to make a stage for him.

[He said he was destined to meet Song Xuan and he favors Song Xuan. That was his excuse. The real reason is... Song Jue got to make friends with such a powerful figure in the past!]

[This time, maybe, his powerful friend didn't come to help but sent his son to support Song Jue...]

[This is such a powerful support!]

[It turns out Song Jue is the most influential figure in our clan.]

[This young man seems to be utterly powerful, yet he actually called Song Jue... Uncle Song? With respect?]

Suddenly, the elders were all astonished. They were wordless. At the same time, they felt upset.

If they knew Song Jue had such powerful connections, if they knew Song Jue had a friend who was powerful enough to make an impact to the world, they would never let Song Wuyang do those filthy things in the past!

If Song Jue's brother was still the chief of the clan, maybe... Song

Clan would never be in any despairing situation.

In fact, Song Clan might not just be free from problems but also rule the entire Oracle District!

However... the entire clan had forced Song Jue and his brother to a dead end. Song Jue's powerful support actually showed up at such time...

It was such an embarrassing moment for Song Clan!

Ye Xiao was smiling. He looked at those elders being embarrassed. He felt it funny.

After what happened, he reckoned, Song Jue would be safely put in that highest chair in the Song Clan.

He couldn't kill all those people after all...

Song Clan was a big force in the Oracle District. Song Jue and Song Xuan were not enough to be influential enough in this place!

He figured he should leave everything else to Song Jue afterwards.

He believed after what happened, Song Jue would become the ruler of the entire Song Clan. Nobody could fight it.

Song Jue got to do whatever he wanted to.

Ye Xiao thought that he shouldn't worry too much for Song Jue!

...

In the backyard.

Song Jue was holding a chicken drumstick in one hand and a liquor pot in the other, eating and drinking. How enjoyable! In fact, he looked a bit frustrated.

Song Jue had never thought that his elder brother would be repealed from the chief's chair because of him until he returned to the realm and saw the truth.

For so many years, there had been resources that were sent

regularly to Ye Nantian from Ye Clan as a comfort. However, Song Jue had never received anything from the Song Clan. Nobody from Ye Clan had ever paid him a visit. Song Jue used to say he didn't care about that. In fact, he did. When he returned to the realm... he got to know the reason. His brother did want to see him down the lower world, but he was in trouble himself.

His brother was repealed because of what Song Jue had done. Not long after that, his brother was poisoned. That reduced nine out of ten of his cultivation. His nephew, Song Xuan, who used to be so talented, became useless...

Song Jue had given up on his clan. He even wanted to destroy the entire clan!

Song Jue had some supreme dan beads which Ye Xiao gave him before he returned. He wasn't sure whether they could fully cure his brother and nephew, but he believed it would help. However, after giving a second thought, he convinced himself not to try it.

Supreme dan beads were marvelous treasures for them. If his brother and nephew suddenly recovered after he returned, everybody would know it was him who did that.

He was much more powerful than he used to be, but he was still not the most powerful one in the Song Clan!

That was why he decided to wait. He didn't want anybody to keep an eye on him.

He was waiting till the day he was more powerful to handle all those chaotic situations...

He had the dan beads that might cure his people, but he had to not use them. Song Jue was such a man of humanity. He suffered from it!

When he heard there were people messing with the Song Clan out there, he just ignored it.

In fact, he felt great that somebody finally started to make

trouble for the Song Clan.

That was great!

He would rather let some powerful figures destroy the entire Song Clan. He would love it.

[What point does it have to keep this filthy clan alive in the world?]

...

Chapter 1000: Reunion

If Song Clan collapsed, Song Jue could go far away with his brother and nephews in the clan. With the stuff Ye Xiao gave him, it wouldn't be difficult to create a new Song Clan somewhere else!

"The problem is solved..." The third steward ran to him and said, "My lord, prime elder has sent for you."

Song Jue looked at the steward in confusion. [Are you spreading the wrong message because of madness?]

[You have been so indifferent to me since the day I got back here.]

[Why do you suddenly treat me so nicely... It makes me feel like your grandfather or something.]

He didn't know that, in truth, if he wanted to take the three stewards as his grandsons, they would be most pleased to accept it. They would even shed tears because of happiness. They would sincerely call Song Jue 'grandpa' with an even nicer attitude than when they called their real grandpas!

Not only the three stewards, but also all the other people who knew what had happened wanted to build a good and firm connection with Song Jue. Those who used to be in a good relationship with him would hope for something better!

[Look how much Song Xuan has gotten!]

[Who doesn't want that! Who wouldn't envy him!]

"Song Qingyang, are you out of your mind?" Song Jue squinted at the steward and didn't move. He said, "What is it? Haven't they killed you all yet? And it is done? My heavens. Where is justice?"

The third steward was embarrassed. "My lord, you are joking... This is serious. We shouldn't make fun of it. Heh, heh..."

"Heh, heh my ass. Am I joking? I am not joking!" Song Jue humped and said, "You are not my son. I don't need to make you

laugh, do I? Who do you think you are?"

The third steward was awkward. He said, "My lord, I know that you have always been unsatisfied with me. I was ignorant. I didn't recognize you, the true god! But... to be honest, who dares to talk to you? If somebody found out I was in a good relationship with you, it would be... You know, I have a family, with a wife, kids, and others... They are depending on me... Please forgive me... Besides, I didn't go any closer to you in the old days, but I never made troubles for you. I was never rude to you. Please, my lord, forgive me. From now on, you are like my grandfather... How about that?"

That was frank. He was being too humble. It was obviously adulation.

Song Jue humped, "Yet now you dare? You even treat me as your grandfather? I don't have a grandson as old as you!"

"Ahem..." The third steward smiled bitterly, "Whatever you think I am, I am! Let me be honest, things have changed... Song Wuyang and his men are all killed. His power is gone. Over three hundred men died this time. Over four hundred are imprisoned. Another three hundred are expelled... Song Clan is..."

"What? What did you say?" Song Jue stood up. His eyeballs nearly popped out of his eye frames. 'What is going on?"

"That's why the prime elder sent for you... He is waiting in the main hall..." The third steward bowed humbly.

"Go!"

Song Jue jumped up and walked to the door. He was laughing. "Tell me the details. Holy heavens. That is brilliant! Bastards, they finally got what they deserved. This feels so... Oh, right. Who are those men? How come they are so powerful? I am impressed!"

"My brother, my nephew... now this person... Hahahaha... They are the only three I admire..."

Song Jue laughed.

He didn't mean his kindred brother and nephew. He was talking about Ye Nantian and Ye Xiao.

The third steward was surprised. [Brother? Nephew? He admired?]

[Holy heavens. He does have powerful connections...]

As he ran after Song Jue, he told him everything while sweating...

"My friend? Nephew? Visiting me?" Song Jue was confused. "I don't have such powerful friends in the Qing-Yun Realm. Han Bingxue? Frost Sword? He is such a powerful figure. How is he possibly my friend? His boss? A young man? What? This doesn't make sense..."

He was lost. His head was full of confusion.

...

He arrived at the main hall and walked in without hesitation.

He saw eight elders walking out to greet him. "Heh, heh... Little Jue, you came..." They were so nice to Song Jue all of a sudden. Apparently, it was adulation too.

Song Jue had goosebumps when he saw them. "Cut the crap! Little Jue? Little Jue my ass! Don't talk to me like that. I feel sick!"

He walked into the hall with a dark face.

Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing nearly laughed out loud.

[Little Jue?]

[What a typical name!]

[It is as good as Tom and Jerry!]

Also, 'little Jue my ass' was also quite funny.

"Uncle Song." Ye Xiao stood up and walked to Song Jue.

Song Jue was confused before he saw Ye Xiao. When he saw Ye

Xiao, he nearly passed out. He was shaking and staring at Ye Xiao's face. He shouted, "Xiao Xiao? Is it really you?"

Ye Xiao answered with a nod.

Han Bingxue's entire face was twisted. It even looked a bit horrible.

[Xiao Xiao?]

[Little Jue is funny enough. Xiao Xiao? This must be a joke!]

[However, I can only laugh at him in my heart... I won't dare to call him Xiao Xiao. That is simply seeking for death.]

He was right. He might get his skin ripped off if he dared to call Ye Xiao that. It wasn't a problem for him, but... he was confused. Song Jue was no better than level seven of Dream Origin Stage. He couldn't understand why he could call Ye Xiao that name!

[Hmm. Wait. If boss calls him uncle, that means he is an uncle to me too?]

[Holy heavens!]

"Hahaha... I was wondering. It turns out my dear nephew came to see me! Great!" Song Jue laughed loudly. He was so happy. He walked to Ye Xiao hurriedly and held Ye Xiao on the shoulders. He looked up and down at Ye Xiao with concern in his eyes.

"How are you? Have you been hurt? You are taller... more handsome... Hahaha..." He was so thrilled. His thin face became red because of it.

...

Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901: Typical Li Wuliang!](#)

[Chapter 902: That Accounts For It!](#)

[Chapter 903: Human Vice!](#)

[Chapter 904: Why?](#)

[Chapter 905: Grey Wolf Fought For You!](#)

[Chapter 906: Sky Soul Mountain!](#)

[Chapter 907: Sky Soul Precipice!](#)

[Chapter 908: His Lady Came For Revenge!](#)

[Chapter 909: Jumped Off the Cliff](#)

[Chapter 910: Red and White Clouds](#)

[Chapter 911: Sky Soul Power Aura](#)

[Chapter 912: Chaotic Soul Clouds!](#)

[Chapter 913: Massive Absorption](#)

[Chapter 914: Full Mountain of Bones!](#)

[Chapter 915: My Soul Power, Your Strength!](#)

[Chapter 916: Undying Heroes!](#)

[Chapter 917: Where Is Li Wuliang?](#)

[Chapter 918: You Are Alive, Brother!](#)

[Chapter 919: Weird Ganoderma](#)

[Chapter 920: The Best Bad Friend](#)

[Chapter 921: This Is Life!](#)

[Chapter 922: Ghost Ganoderma!](#)

[Chapter 923: What A Good Luck](#)

[Chapter 924: Am I Really That Kind of Person?](#)

[Chapter 925: Precaution!](#)

[Chapter 926: Can't Take the Risk!](#)

[Chapter 927: Golden Hawk!](#)

[Chapter 928: Can You Speak Hawk Language?](#)

[Chapter 929: Don't You Play Foolish!](#)

[Chapter 930: Lure](#)

[Chapter 931: I Can't Touch You?](#)

[Chapter 932: Babyish Golden Hawk](#)

[Chapter 933: Flaming Needle](#)

- [Chapter 934: Speed of the Hawk!](#)
- [Chapter 935: Tempest-thunder Golden Hawk!](#)
- [Chapter 936: Stars Sword!](#)
- [Chapter 937: Fully Loaded; Goodbye!](#)
- [Chapter 938: Cultivation Boost!](#)
- [Chapter 939: Shadowless Assassin!](#)
- [Chapter 940: One Sword Move; Problem Solved!](#)
- [Chapter 941: Break Out](#)
- [Chapter 942: Who Are You?](#)
- [Chapter 943: Han Bingxue!](#)
- [Chapter 944: Fortunate](#)
- [Chapter 945: Monarch's Footwork!](#)
- [Chapter 946: Monarch's Sword!](#)
- [Chapter 947: Frost Heaven!](#)
- [Chapter 948: Terrified!](#)
- [Chapter 949: Only One!](#)
- [Chapter 950: Brother, It's Me!](#)
- [Chapter 951: Strong Brotherhood!](#)
- [Chapter 952: Limitless Boldness](#)
- [Chapter 953: Coincidence](#)
- [Chapter 954: Strong Fellowship](#)
- [Chapter 955: Useless Son?](#)
- [Chapter 956: Afterwards Accountability](#)
- [Chapter 957: I Got You!](#)
- [Chapter 958: Erhuo's Wish](#)
- [Chapter 959: Beaten By A Cat](#)
- [Chapter 960: Crow Mouth](#)
- [Chapter 961: Weird Attitude](#)
- [Chapter 962: Go the Same Way](#)
- [Chapter 963: Too Amorous](#)
- [Chapter 964: You Liar!](#)
- [Chapter 965: Freaked Out](#)
- [Chapter 966: You Are Fooled](#)
- [Chapter 967: Good Fortune In Love Affairs](#)
- [Chapter 968: Rising Jealousy!](#)
- [Chapter 969: Too Much to Do](#)
- [Chapter 970: Mistake](#)
- [Chapter 971: Bravo, Boss](#)
- [Chapter 972: Punching Bag](#)

- [Chapter 973: Why Would I Not Dare?](#)
- [Chapter 974: Troubles to the East!](#)
- [Chapter 975: Ready to Kill!](#)
- [Chapter 976: Do It!](#)
- [Chapter 977: Explanation](#)
- [Chapter 978: To Revenge By Himself](#)
- [Chapter 979: Reason to Kill](#)
- [Chapter 980: Boss?](#)
- [Chapter 981: Familiar Body Fragrance?](#)
- [Chapter 982: Grey Mountain Stranger](#)
- [Chapter 983: The Horrible Organization Again](#)
- [Chapter 984: Possible Target](#)
- [Chapter 985: Is She Ugly?](#)
- [Chapter 986: Oracle District](#)
- [Chapter 987: Song Clan's Domain](#)
- [Chapter 988: Implicated?](#)
- [Chapter 989: Song Jue's nephew?](#)
- [Chapter 990: What A Brave Man...](#)
- [Chapter 991: Fury!](#)
- [Chapter 992: Song Clan](#)
- [Chapter 993: Condemnation](#)
- [Chapter 994: White and Black](#)
- [Chapter 995: Killing God Descended](#)
- [Chapter 996: Kill!](#)
- [Chapter 997: We Are Destined](#)
- [Chapter 998: Turn a Stone into Gold](#)
- [Chapter 999: Uncle Song Jue](#)
- [Chapter 1000: Reunion](#)